

BASIC TRUTH

VOLUME XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Part I

Beginners Bible Study

Part II

Christ In You

Part III

Competition

Part IV

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Part V

Seeking God

Part VI

The Jubilee

Part VII

By

Art Mocarow

SIMPLICITY IN CHRIST

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 1

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *SIMPLICITY IN CHRIST*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

he True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christians Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

God's Image – Vol. XIV

Seeking God

God's Free Choice

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
EQUAL WITH GOD	1
WHY THE MESSIAH CAME	7
WHY GOD HATES IDOLATRY	13
GOD MAKES US EQUAL	19
THE SPIRITUAL PROCESSES	25
PERFECTION TO HOLINESS	31
DOCTRINES DIFFER	37
GOD'S IMAGE HIS SONS	43
CHRIST'S DOCTRINES	49
GOD REPRODUCED	55

PREFACE

The Bible is the most mysterious book ever written. No human can understand this book because it is God's Word. Yet, it is the simplest story ever told.

The Holy Bible Story is about The One True God who is reproducing Himself. This story is how God makes man in His image (Genesis 1:26).

This book is entirely free and no money is accepted. Use your funds to aid the orphans, widows and those who are truly poor or helpless.

Comments and criticisms are appreciated.

There are, now, three new CDs. They are in PDF format, which allows you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: God's Puzzle Solved, Part I, II, III, IV and V; CD #2: 29 Other Books; CD #3: Articles on various subjects.

We are sorry if countries outside of the U.S. charge horrendous tariffs for packages containing these books. Perhaps requesting CDs will be the answer.

Address: Art Mokarow, Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Website: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Books)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Articles)

INTRODUCTION

John, The Apostle, made a comment concerning the difference between *The Law* and Christ, “*For the law was given by Moses, but grace and truth came by Jesus Christ*” (John 1:17).

What makes *The Law* so different from what Christ brought? *The Law* is just a shadow of good things to come, “*For the law having a shadow [reflection] of good things to come, and not the very image of the things, can never with those sacrifices which they offered year by year continually make the comers thereunto perfect*” (Hebrews 10:1).

Quite clear. *The Law of Moses* was just “*a reflection*” like in a mirror of what is true. Keeping any or all of the words and the demands of *The Law* doesn’t give “*mercy*” but only “*pardons*” the sinner. *The Law* certainly doesn’t make anyone “*perfect*” like God (Matthew 5:48).

“*Mercy*” and “*truth*” only comes through Christ in its Simplicity. “*Christ – In You*” is The Mystery of God (Colossians 1:27).

Being like Christ (a duplicate) makes a person “*perfect.*”

The Old Covenant under Moses, with *The Law of Moses*, cannot make anyone “*perfect*” like God, “*Be you therefore perfect, even as your Father which is in heaven is perfect*” (Matthew 5:48).

The Law can only tell you what not to do because it explains sin (I John 3:4). *The Law* cannot change human

nature. Only Christ can by God's Holy Spirit. Christ is therefore The One who brought The Truth of God.

WHAT IS TRUTH?

“Sanctify [seal] them [disciples] through your truth: your word is truth” (John 17:17). Jesus had the full measure by God's Holy Spirit which is The Word of God (Luke 1:35).

John 3:34 writes that what God sent down from heaven was God's Holy Spirit given to Jesus without measure. He was the complete Word of God.

The Old Testament is just what it is, “a testament” or “proof by a witness in court” as The Truth.

The New Testament is a court witness, but even more it proved perfection is the truth in reality. It proves God's Word is Truth.

“Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling [Holy Spirit] consider the apostle [one sent] of our profession [witness] Christ Jesus. Who was faithful to him that appointed him, as also Moses was faithful in all his house. For this man [not God] was counted worthy of more glory [goodness] than Moses who was faithful in his house” (Hebrews 3:1-2).

Now it is clear. Moses and *The Law* with The Tabernacle as God's House all worshipped God by physical works which were only a reflection in a mirror of what was to be real.

Christ's House was in the exact image of God, built

through Christ as The Chief Corner Stone by God's Holy Spirit. Why? God is a Spirit and wants to spiritually be worshipped through God's Holy Spirit (John 4:24).

By God's Holy Spirit, you are spiritually led to The Truth to become like God in His Image.

CHAPTER 1

EQUAL WITH GOD

The Old Covenant biblically isn't really *The Oldest Covenant* in *The Old Testament*. In Hebrew, *The Old Testament* in *The Tanakh*. *The Tanakh* includes all *The Torah*, first five books, all *The Prophets* wrote, and the writings of *Psalms*. There are many *Covenants* by God in *The Old Testament*, before *The Old Covenant*.

The oldest *Covenant*, even before *Noah's Covenant* at the flood was *The Everlasting Covenant*, *The Old Covenant* with Israel and *The New Covenant* with Christ.

EVERLASTING COVENANT

Isaiah 55:1-6 the prophet describes *The Everlasting Covenant* referring to *The Garden of Eden* with the fountain of living water for everyone (the world). This also has the mercies of King David.

Psalm 51:1-6 David repents and what mercy he prays to God to forgive him as well as keep God's Holy Spirit of truth.

IMAGE OF GOD

Genesis 1:26 gives you the whole story of what *The*

***Bible* is about. *The Everlasting Covenant* as The Tree of Life offers world Salvation to mankind. God is reproducing Himself as Sons of God.**

Christ, as The First Begotten Son of God, a human, scripturally informs you God sent His Holy Spirit from heaven which made Christ Holy as God's first son (Luke 1:35).

EQUALITY

Paul in *The Book of Philipians* describes Christ's faith in His Father. The Pharisees and Sadducees thought it was blasphemy to think one can be equal with God.

Philippians 2:5 declares you should as Christians have the mind of Christ. The rest of the chapter tells what mind your Savior had. Jesus did not think it was robbery to be equal with God.

He wasn't stealing from God because Christ knew His Father was reproducing Himself in mankind (Genesis 1:26). He knew God's Holy Spirit which was in Him from birth was to be God's First Begotten Son and therefore to be perfect as God (Matthew 5:48). He would have no sin making Him the body purposed for sacrifice. This was for the sins of the world (Hebrews 10:5-7).

Then Paul writes in Philipians 2:12 that Christians individually should work out their own Salvation with fear and trembling. The entire chapter teaches Christ's mind is exactly like God's mind and heart.

This is spiritual growth by God's Holy Spirit. You need to become perfect. There it is, God's story to the next step to perfection. This is the simplicity in Christ with no works of a law.

DOCTRINES, A BEGINNING

Doctrines defined in Hebrew and Greek is a teaching. It is a teaching from God or someone else. Doctrines become more and more in meaning as you grow spiritually.

Doctrines are clues of truth by God as you choose to continue to grow. When you think you have the truth, you were naked as the Laodicean church in Revelation 3. Add one clue, doctrine, to another and you arrive at another deeper spiritual doctrine.

AS ONE

Christ knew every word of God in full measure (John 3). Since He did in faith He always did His Father's will. Then He and His Father are One. That is why when you see the Son you see the Father. When one's mother declares you are just like your dad, that is what Christ always did. Not only are they of each other's thinking but to think alike you as well with Christ need the same heart or desires motivating you.

GOD'S WILL

God having complete liberty to do whatsoever He chooses for you to be also in His image like Christ

must also have free choice. It is the foundational doctrine (teaching) given by God to Adam and Eve in The Garden.

Isaiah 45 God discloses He creates evil. Evil in Hebrew is to cause harm. God does not make you do harm, but allows you the liberty to do so. It all depends upon your hearts or motivational desires. You do have many false idols even as yourselves.

God is all-powerful and could intervene and stop you, but to be like Him is your choice. God's will is directed toward fulfilling His counsel and purpose which is His will. God's will is always conditional depending upon your own choices.

PROPHECIES FAIL

I Corinthians 13:8 Paul writes prophecies will fail. Why? In Greek, fail means, stop, pause or delay. God's will as you have proven is also conditional by free choice. The outcome of a prophecy is not will it happen but when?

King Hezekiah had his foretold death delayed by God for fifteen years because of his humility and repentant heart. Christ's rejection by His Bride, Israel, allowed Jesus to choose another Bride, The Gentiles who were more worthy. Later, at The Messiah's return He once again chooses Israel as His bride (Matthew 21:43 and Romans 11:25-26).

***The Bible* is filled with prophesy put off because all**

conditions have not been met. From Genesis many prophecies are delayed right to Revelations.

Revelation 10:4-7 the seven thunders are sealed, stopped, before they can be opened again because The Seventh Trump announces The Messiah's return and therefore The Mystery of God is fulfilled.

The reason is simple, the seven churches in Revelation 2-3 are not worthy, just like Israel. The Bride is still not worthy until the destruction of Babylon, the whore (Revelation 15-19). Finally, The Bride becomes worthy to be The Wife and The Messiah comes in Revelation 20 (Revelation 19:7-8).

EQUALITY IS CONDITIONAL

For God to make man in His image as a Son of God is absolute but no set date. With no set precise time, it is a potential to ultimately come to pass with no set time or age.

As Christ said, His return is determined only by God, your Father. Until then, no kingdom of God can take place it is a potential until everyone repents to become equal or One with God (II Peter 3:9).

Then and only then shall you be ready to be The Wife of Christ and equal with God. All are destined once to die, and then once repent (Hebrews 9:27).

CHAPTER 2

WHY THE MESSIAH CAME

Thousands of years have come and gone, but of the billions of people who were born and died since the creation, no one obeyed God perfectly. Abraham was close, and in faith obeyed every word God told him, but he wasn't perfect. Was God asking too much?

BORN IN SIN

Paul clearly said, "*Wherefore, as by one man [Adam] sin entered the world, and death by sin; so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned*" (Romans 5:12). Everyone is born to sin, whether homosexuals, liars, murderers, etc., all were born that way because you are carnal.

BABES IN CHRIST

Even new Christians who are baptized and have God's Holy Spirit are carnal, "*And I, brethren, could not speak to you as spiritual, but to carnal, even as babes in Christ [new Christians]*" (I Corinthians 3:1).

"Carnal" in Greek is "*to be an animal and eat them.*" The only question is what kind of animal, lamb, ox, goat or even worse a lion, bear or leopard.

You were made on the sixth day of the week as part of the animal kingdom, “*For the creature was made subject to vanity [no purpose], not willingly [no choice], but by reason of him who has subjected the same in hope, Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from that bondage [slavery] of corruption [death] into the glorious liberty of the children of God*” (Romans 8:20-21).

Paul told you you were born like any creature to die with no purpose like other animals. You, however, as *Homo sapiens*, have a prophetic hope and destiny, “*For the earnest expectation of the creature waits for the manifestation of the sons of God*” (Romans 8:19). From an animal with no purpose to God’s sons as equal kind or species in His family. Wow!

Every human, however, before your Savior, sinned, whose penalty by free choice is death, needs Salvation. Paul just promised it will happen to the creation.

A PECULIAR PEOPLE

The Apostle Peter writes it is a peculiar people (race) who achieve this liberty in Christ, “*But you are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people [rarer-picked]; that you should show forth [witness] the praises of him who have called you out of darkness [not knowing] into his marvelous light [truth]*” (I Peter 2:9).

This remnant (few) through Christ The Chief Cornerstone of God’s Temple, who you are (I Corinthians

3:16) is the Bride of Christ. Billions of humans and even when The Messiah saved you are few and far in between.

When Christ was on earth preaching, while feeding the thousands, only His disciples stayed faithful to him. Here was His answer to the thousands He fed, *“Verily, verily, I say to you, you seek me, not because you saw the miracles, but you did eat of the loaves, and were filled”* (John 6:26). They were just like animals seeking self survival. If Jesus as the Son of Man, the first human with all the same weaknesses to survive like any animal, had sinned, He would not have been your Savior.

JESUS, THE MAN

Just before Christ’s crucifixion, He asked His disciples to stay up with Him when He prayed, *“Then saith he to them, My soul [life] is exceeding sorrowful, even to death: tarry you here, and watch with me. And he went a little farther, and fell on his face, and prayed, saying, O My Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me: nevertheless not as I will, but as you will”* (Matthew 26:38-39). That is completely human like any other except He had God’s Holy Spirit in Him. Jesus was really the Son of Man. What faith in His Father to never sin. He was perfect by the faith God gave Him as with Christianity.

THE BODY PREPARED

How did God prepare The Messiah as a sacrifice for

the world? Hebrews gives us the solution, “*Then said I, Lo, I come (in the volume of the book it is written of me) to do your will, O God*” (Hebrews 10:7). Because Christ was The Word of God given to Him sent from heaven He also from birth was given God’s Holy Spirit without measure (John 3:34).

He was without excuse because He always knew good from evil. He had to exercise greater faith because He always knew the whole truth. He was never blind to the truth as you are. Because your Savior always knew the truth, He would have been will fully guilty of sin and could not have been the Savior, “*Jesus said to them [Pharisees], if you were blind, you should have not sin: but now you say, We see, therefore your sin remains*” (John 9:41). That is absolute.

WHO KNEW THE TRUTH

Christ had the truth from His birth until He died. The Simplicity in Christ is so easy because God gives the truth The Messiah had to you as a gift with no works but repentance, “*And I will pray the Father, and he shall give you [a gift] another comforter, that he may abide with you forever; Even the spirit of truth whom the world cannot receive, because it sees him not, neither knows him [Holy Spirit]: but you know him for he dwells with you. I will not leave you comfortless; I will come to you*” (John 14:16-18). Pretty simple. Christ in you is His gift to Christians to be just like Him in thought and heart.

Speaking to His disciples, read what He told them,

“Because it is given to you to know the mysteries of the kingdom, but to them it is not given” (Matthew 13:11).

PROOF OF THE MESSIAH

Many wonder is Jesus really The Messiah. How can Christians know? Truth is fact which is real, absolute, undeniable.

Fact in English denotes a factor as in mathematics. A Factor is a number which can be measured like one person plus a second person makes two people alike. That is truth.

God’s Holy Spirit is God’s Word as you have read, which is truth. It is absolute and thus dependable. God’s Holy Spirit is God’s Word which is His power, love, and a sound mind, or wisdom. It is provable by humans who have the God-given ability by the Spirit in man to understand (Job 32:8).

Knowing the truth, you now have the ability to comprehend good and evil. Wow! This is Christ in you, the simplicity of Christ.

CHAPTER 3

WHY GOD HATES IDOLATRY

Humanity's normal idea of an idol is some statue or image which people worship. God biblically explains a statue can do nothing.

Others say it only represents God, but that is impossible. No one has seen or even heard God's voice, no human knows what God looks like and how His voice sounds.

You have already proven scripturally God's Holy Spirit is God's voice in Hebrews 3:7. Idolatry can be many things determined by what you worship above all else.

VOICE OF GOD

Now you know God's voice is spiritual. Humans do not really understand what a spirit is.

John 3 your Savior said humans can only know what is spirit by comparing it to physical things. You have no idea what is a spirit.

Communicating between people has a variety of methods. Some do so by sound like beating on a drum. The blind use feeling through their touch. People who cannot hear use sign languages. You have five senses

whereby you can communicate and understand each other. How many methods do spirits have? Lately science is experimenting with mind reading of your thoughts. God who is a spirit can have numerous systems of understanding between other spirits which are completely foreign to you.

When you say God's Holy Spirit is God's voice, what does that mean? Only God knows. It is like an idiom which can mean other things than just the sound of a human voice.

Voice meaning God's Holy Spirit is only written for the way you generally communicate with each other, but spiritually includes other methods than a human voice comparison.

DESIRES AND WISDOM

What can disrupt your way of thinking logically? Logic is also a method of measurement in mathematics. You call them logarithms. They are arithmetical systems of using your intellect to measure what is true. To be able to know fact from fiction. Fiction may be possible, but is not a proven reality.

The Bible clearly states what is the cause of losing straight or logical thinking, "*Through desire a man [human], having separated himself [by choice], sees [looks for] and intermeddles [confuses] with all wisdom*" (Proverbs 18:1).

Your desires cause you to not think logically or straight.

If you desire harmful things to yourselves and others, you set aside wise thinking. You lose your wisdom.

A fool, an unwise person, doesn't care about understanding facts, but only one's heart, which is what they want most above all else (Proverbs 18:2). You have a wrong heart, which is idolatry of yourselves.

You insist you are right, rather than finding The Truth. Proverbs 18:4 is like a person in such deep waters they are in the dark and cannot see anything. They are blind just like in outer darkness.

A well spring of running waters seeing to the bottom is having wisdom. In fact, as the running water glides over the stones, the more you can see the bottom.

Idolatry is worshipping any else but God. Like Job or worse idolize yourselves, thinking you are right. (Read the book, *What is Idolatry*).

Any human desire of heart above the worship of God is idolatry. This includes all humans or any other part of God's creation.

GOD IS ONE

The English word for God is highly misunderstood. Elohim is both a noun and a verb. When used as a noun, it is always plural or many. The point is, who is the many?

I Corinthians 15:28 declares God is All in All. There

is your answer. The creation is God in you. Not two or three or more gods, but only The One God in everything else.

When Elohim is used in Genesis 1 always as a verb, denoting action, it is singular – the one God and Father of all. As a verb, Hebrews 3:4 writes, it is the God who builds all things.

Giving credit to any human is foolish because even Christ as a human could do nothing of himself (John 5:19). Even more, The Son tells you He can only do what The Father does. Only The One God and Creator of all things does the actual work.

The Son, as you follow The Son in faith, then you do what The Father told Jesus as well as you, your works are by faith in The Son of God which is the actual work done by The Father.

It is The Holy Spirit which is God's voice, which you in faith follow as well. God is the one who is all in all and not Christ.

You are not to worship anything else but God, your Father. God is to be in you just as God is in Christ, by The Holy Spirit, *“To whom then will you liken me, or shall I be equal? said the Holy one”* (Isaiah 40:25).

Comparing God to anyone as an equal can only be an idol, a false god, *“Lift up your eyes [the universe] on high, and behold who has created these things [whole creation], that brings out their host by number [math]:*

he calls them all by names [individually] by the greatness of his might [Holy Spirit], for that he [God] is strong in power [Holy Spirit], not one fails [lost]. Why say you, O Jacob [Israel], and speak O Israel, My way is hid from the Lord, the Creator of the ends of the earth, faints not [overtired], neither is weary [worn out]: there is no searching [discovery] of his understanding” (Isaiah 40:26-28).

Any kind of credit to any of God’s Creation, including Christ in the flesh, is a false god and not to be worshipped as gods.

God hates idolatry, even your own egos to ever be equal to God Almighty. How can you and Christ think it is not robbery to be equal with God (Philippians 2:6)?

CHAPTER 4

GOD MAKES YOU EQUAL

Christ, as well as Christians, do not think it is robbery, stealing, when you become equal with God. How can that be? The solution is God is the one reproducing Himself and no one else, including Christ, can become like God of themselves.

CHRIST'S BIRTH

The Jews said they only have God as their Father being of Abraham's seed (John 8:33). They claimed Christ was of fornication, but they of Abraham (John 8:41). Christ answered, "*Jesus said to them, If God were your Father, you would love me: for I proceed forth and came from God; neither came I from myself [Son of Man – flesh], but he that sent me*" (John 8:42).

My, your Savior demanded even He cannot make Himself equal with God, only that God who sent Him can. God is the only one to make you equal to Him. God is reproducing Himself and no one else.

Do you realize what your Savior just told you in John 8:42? Christ said He did not say He came from Himself. He did not always exist as God's Word in the flesh as a human. It was Christ, The Son of Man, a human who became The Word of God. John, The

Apostle, said Jesus is The Word of God who became flesh. The human, Jesus in the flesh, was not God. The Word was God. Whatever is God's Word was sent from heaven. Who was The Word of God?

You know John 17:14-22 Christ Himself told you the Word of God was the Father's Word, not Christ's. He also prayed to the Father to put your Father's Word in all who repent and seek God. Wow!

God proclaims who will be equal to God (Isaiah 40:25). Read Isaiah 40:26-31. Your Father tells you He makes you equal, like Him, when you can do nothing of yourselves like Christ as without any strength or abilities, *"But they that wait upon the Lord shall renew [restore] their strength; they shall mount up with wings as eagles [can see] they shall run and not be weary [like God]; and they shall walk, and not faint"* (Isaiah 40:31).

That explains it clearly. It is God, the Father, who is The Creator who builds all things (Hebrews 3:4). No one else, not even Christ.

PREPARED BODY

God accepts no sacrifice for Salvation but one, *"Then said I, Lo, I Come (in the book it is written of me) to do thy will [The Father's], O God"* (Hebrews 10:7).

David sings God prepared a body, a special body, instead of animal sacrifice which God does not accept for Salvation, *"Let all those that seek you rejoice and be glad in you: let such as love your salvation say con-*

tinually, The Lord be magnified. But I am poor and needy; yet the Lord thinks upon me: You are my help and my deliverer; make no tarrying [delay], O my God” (Psalm 40:16-17).

It is God Himself who is the sacrifice and not Christ. How did King David know this? Where does David tell you how God forgives him from his sins of murder and adultery? God gives Himself.

Psalm 51:1-12 is David’s prayer and song of repentance. It is not to Christ, but God Almighty, to whom David repents and pleads for His Father’s Salvation (Psalm 51:10-12).

What made David clean in his heart and why he received mercy for his sins is keeping God’s Holy Spirit. God’s Holy spirit is God your Father’s power, love, and God’s very sound mind. How wonderful is God.

When Jesus, just before his bodily death, cried out, “My God, My God, why have you forsaken me?” God had not left him, but the Holy Spirit, God in Him was gone to die for His First Begotten Son.

God Himself died by The Holy Spirit within Christ. Christ felt The Holy Spirit within Him was gone so Jesus died as well, as The Son of Man. Christ’s body, his flesh was in hades, or “*sheol*” in Hebrew, for three days. Just as our Savior said, “*Destroy this temple, and in three days I will raise it up.*”

He was referring to the spiritual temple by God’s Holy

Spirit, “*Know you not that you are the temple of God, and the spirit of God dwells in you*” (I Corinthians 3:16). Pretty simple. The Temple of God is God’s Holy Spirit in The Father and The Son.

YOU ARE GODS

The Pharisees told Christ they will not stone you for a good work, but because you, a man, make yourself God (John 10:33).

The Messiah quotes Psalm 82:6, which calls Israel as gods. Why? “*If he called them gods, to whom the word of God came, and the scripture cannot be broken: Say you of him, whom the Father has sanctified [sealed], and sent to the world, you blaspheme: because I said I am the Son of God? If I do not the works of my Father, believe me not. But if I do, though you believe not me, believe the works: that you may know, and believe, that the Father is in me, and I in him*” (John 10:35-38).

The simplicity in Christ is God the Father Himself dwells in Jesus, a human in His flesh though God’s Holy Spirit.

Anyone having God’s Holy Spirit in them has God Himself in them. So said Christ. Humans of yourselves cannot be equal with God unless God Himself dwells in you by God’s Holy Spirit. Then you are Sons of God because God’s Holy Spirit is God in you, just like God is in Christ.

You never existed before the creation, just like Jesus

did not exist as well. God Himself had to give life to Christ as Jesus likewise to you (John 5:26). Quite simple.

Being equal to God can only be done by God Himself dwelling in you by God's Holy Spirit. Then you become sons of God equal to Him (John 8:14).

CHAPTER 5

THE SPIRITUAL PROCESSES

You have read in Romans 8 that humans in the beginning were just creatures with no purpose. You also know that creature had hope to become sons of God by God's Holy Spirit. From animal to becoming equal with God as Sons of God.

GOD'S REPRODUCTION SYSTEM

You know scripturally God is making mankind in His image (Genesis 1:26). "Image" in Hebrew is defined as "*a phantom, ghost, or unreal.*" "Salem" in the Hebrew is this hazy image you are to become Sons of God. God is reproducing Himself.

Reproduction in spirit is completely the opposite to the human sexual method by male and female. Angels do not marry to have sex because spiritual reproduction only can be done by God your Father Himself. Angels cannot reproduce themselves as humans can.

SPIRIT IS NOT CONSTANT

Spirit is what God is, and therefore can be whatever He chooses to be. Spirit beings can be many things. They can be apparitions looking like humans. They can appear as angels of light, even though they are

demonic in their natures, *“For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, Transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. And no marvel: for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of Light”* (II Corinthians 11:13-14). Pretty clear.

God is The I Am, The Existing One who is Eternal but can be whatever one chooses to be. Human sex duplicates the parents in their image, which is constant and repetitive forever. Not so with God or the spiritual realm. Spirits can alter their appearance to even look like humans.

When God chooses to do so and appears as a human, it is called a theophany, God in you. If Satan and his angels, they are devils and demons. Humans can only discuss spiritual things with physical comparisons, as Jesus said in John 3 to Nicodemus.

The best human comparison physically is that God is eternal energy (force) who is Almighty, or more powerful than any physical or spiritual reality.

You know He can appear as a human as with God’s visit to Abraham. He has hair, face, arms, midsection, legs and feet. He is The Ancient (Oldest) of Days as He told Daniel.

What does that really mean when you know God can be whatever He chooses to be by His free choice. You as sons of God will have the same clothing when you are glorified in The Resurrection, because as you will be, so is God (I Corinthians 12:12).

Now, humans only know in part, but when you are in God's image, you will understand. The physical universe sexually reproduces kind after kind.

As God's sons it will be whatever you choose to be as creator sons of God after His kind. Wow!

The physical world is like a hologram, depending upon how God's light energy and power shines on you. At different angles as a prism with shining lights, you see what you see. Is it real, however, or a delusion? God only knows.

God, who creates all things (Hebrews 3:4) is infinite and can eternally become or be more and more by free choice. You also with God become like Him or equal, and can become whatever our creative minds want to be by free choice to be just like God, your Father.

That is why God at The Tower of Babel in The Land of Shinar was concerned humans can become whatever they imagine to be (Genesis 11:6). The trouble was they didn't know good from evil. You have created nuclear bombs which can give free energy to produce electricity for your good or blow yourselves up to nothing. Which will you do? You truly do not know.

BIBLICAL HISTORY

Throughout world history, you have never made any scientific advancement for good which hasn't concluded in evil. War after war, famine after famine, sorrow after sorrow.

As Christ foretold, this is the beginning of the time of sorrows (Matthew 24:8). Not too much hope forewarned by your Savior.

GOD'S REPRODUCTION

God began with Adam and Eve without sin or perfect. All you had to do was allow God your Father to be your Teacher and seek Him so you could be like Him.

At that time in The Garden, God breathed His Spirit, “*ruach*,” into Adam’s nose. Adam became a living Homo sapien with the intelligence to learn. Adam and Eve didn’t know good from evil, let alone they were naked or unclothed. This was God’s first lesson to give Homo sapiens to be conscious to intellectually understand and be able to learn what is right or wrong for survival.

No longer were they creatures as Neanderthal, Cro-Magnon, or even a big foot, but were given God’s ability to comprehend and have understanding. They still weren’t equal to God. Reproduction of being like your Father demanded two more steps.

PERFECTION

To handle power for good and not evil, one needs to intellectually know right from wrong or good from evil. Humans over eons of time by experience can learn the hard way what is the best way to live. This can only be if you don’t destroy yourselves first. To be perfect without causing any harm to anyone or anything

needs help because humans lack that talent. It also is a gift from God as was your ability to understand.

Christ in Matthew 19 told the rich man who kept God's Commandments since his childhood that if he wanted to be perfect, it is only God who can do it for you (Matthew 19:26).

This was the next step God does to make you in His image to be equal as God's son. What extra help do humans need to receive this special gift from God Himself?

LIKE A CHILD

Read the book, *God's School*. Isaiah 28 writes God can only teach knowledge if you deeply choose and within all your desires want Him to teach you as your Father.

When you are born as babes, you know nothing and are very receptive to learn and be taught. Isaiah 46 demands you must choose by your free choice to seek Him while He can be found. Why? Children or adults will not learn unless it is their heart's desire.

Once it is your top priority, you will pursue it tenaciously. This is part or a step further for God to reproduce you in His Image. It is all of your doing and choice.

CHAPTER 6

PERFECTION TO HOLINESS

How does God make you perfect like Him (Matthew 5:48)? Christ never sinned by faith who always chose to do God's will and live by every word of God.

WHO IS GOD'S WORD?

No! The scriptures are very plain to tell you who is God's Word, "*In the beginning* [Creation] *was the word, and the word was God*" (John 1:1).

The Word wasn't Christ? John, The Apostle, simply told you the word was God Almighty. Then who was Jesus? The apostle tells you, "*And the Word was made flesh* [a human], *and dwelt among us, (and we beheld his glory, the glory* [goodness] *as of the only begotten* [sperm] *of the Father,) full of grace and truth*" (John 1:14). Do you get it? This was God The Father placing His Glory, God's sperm of all His goodness, D.N.A., in Christ (Exodus 33:19). It was God reproducing Himself in Jesus a human being who was born by His mother Mary as The Son of Man.

SON OF MAN

This was a theophany of God reproducing Himself in Jesus. Note the prophecy referring to this future

event, *“For you have broken the yoke of his [Israel’s] burden, and the staff of his shoulder [captivity], the rod of his oppressor [slaves], as in the day of Midian. For every battle of the warrior is with confused noise [chaos], and garments rolled in blood [people killed]; but this shall be with burning and fuel of fire. For to us a child is born [human], and the government [God’s] shall be upon his shoulder [Job]: and his name shall be called wonderful, counselor, the mighty God, the everlasting Father [a theophany], the prince of peace [Melchisedek]. Of the increase of his government and peace there shall be no end [God’s], upon the throne of David, and upon his kingdom, to order it, and to establish it with judgement and with justice henceforth even for ever [Eternal]. The zeal of the Lord of Hosts [El Elyon] will perform this”* (Isaiah 9:4-7).

This is about Christ as The Son of God (reproduced). The Lord of Hosts in Hebrew is El Elyon, God The Father Himself, doing all this work personally. Isaiah also prophesied that Christ’s name is Emmanuel, God in you, was the actual Word of God and not Jesus in the flesh. As The Son of Man, He is to be equal with God just like His Father who builds all things (Hebrews 3:4).

The Son of Man (Mary) became The Word of God by God’s Holy Spirit which is God’s voice (Hebrews 3:15). God’s voice of His Holy Spirit is God your Father’s power (energy), love, and His sound mind of wisdom (II Timothy 1:7). My, my, how simple is the truth. That is Christ in you which is God’s Holy Spirit, God’s very Word. It is the Word of God, God’s Holy Spirit, which

leads you to truth as John 17:17 proclaims. This is who made Jesus a human man by faith to be perfect. As a gift from God, Christ sent you God's Word by giving you God's Holy Spirit as well. *"But when the comforter is come, Whom I will send to you from the Father, even the spirit of truth which proceeds from the Father, he [Father's spirit] shall testify [witness] of me"* (John 15:26).

Christ in you is the simplicity of God giving you His Holy Spirit just like Christ has in Him (John 15:27). That is Christ in you, God's Holy Spirit. How simple.

PERFECTION TO HOLINESS

This perfection isn't the whole story to become like your Father. You are two-thirds of the way. God is far more than sinless, which is perfection. Christ came to save the world by being the body prepared by God as an eternal sacrifice to pay for the world's sins, *"Wherefore I say to you, all manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to them"* (Matthew 12:31). Through Christ the world's sins are all forgiven. How wonderful is God.

Being perfect is not enough. For God to reproduce Himself, you need one more gift, *"Blessed be the God and Father of your Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings [gifts], in heavenly places in Christ: According as he has chosen us in him before the foundation of the world, that we should be Holy and without blame before him in love [agape]"* (Ephesians 1:4).

Besides becoming perfect, without sin, you need to be Holy with God's love. Then you will be in God's image as Sons of God. God reproducing Himself is beyond a sex act, as with humans, but an achieved condition of making you, Christ and the world, like God, your Father.

You begin as creatures, like any animal, then Homo sapiens by God's breath in Adam. Now humanity has the intellect to understand intellectually as opposed to other animals. God's *Old Covenant Law of Moses* was to make Israel to seek God and your Father's Son, Jesus. All they knew about *The Law of Moses* was what was sin (I John 3:4).

Now The Messiah by His blood paid for sins of the world so God's Holy Spirit, as God's voice, leads you to perfection once you repent. To be God's equal, you need to finally change to become Holy like God with God's love in you. I Corinthians 13:8 reveals only God's love never fails. Every other gift has conditions to them, but love is what God is making you in God's image, thereby fulfilling *The Law*.

God's love supersedes *all Laws* because it completes or fulfills them all by Christ's definition to be equal with God, "*Not every one that said to me, Lord, Lord [believers], shall enter into the Kingdom of heaven: but he that does the will of my Father which is in heaven*" (Matthew 7:21). What is God's will?

"Therefore all things whatsoever you would that men [humanity] should do to you, do you even so to them:

for this is the law and the prophets” (Matthew 7:12).
There is the answer of what God’s love is fulfilling not all *The Law* but what The Prophets foretold as well. That is the love of God and how God makes you in His image.

CHAPTER 7

DOCTRINES DIFFER

Amazingly, Biblical Godly doctrines differ according to each person's free choice. God rates these three doctrinal teachings from easy, difficult, and moderate. Each method of teaching varies according to your hearts.

GOD, MOSES, AND CHRIST

Isaiah 46:8-10 writes you should behave like men especially those who are sinners. God declares what happens in the end is what started in the beginning. Remember, go back in history because God your Father is the Only God and always makes His counsel stand. Regardless how God counsels and changes His teaching methods, God in the end will do what He began. Simple and clear.

God teaches doctrine one way, Moses another, and Christ still another. Here is God's point of view, "*Seek you the Lord while he may be found*" (Isaiah 55:6). Why does God want you to seek Him and even find Him? The answer is simple, "*Let the wicked forsake his way, and the unrighteous man his thoughts and let him return to the Lord and he will have mercy upon him: and to our God, for he will abundantly pardon. For my thoughts are not your thoughts, neither are your ways my ways, said the Lord*" (Isaiah 55:6-8). Wow!

God will not listen to man if he is wicked or unrighteous. These are two different types of people. One causes harm to God and His creation, and the other refuses to follow every word of God.

Then God reveals His mind and intellect is so far superior to humanity's it's foolish to consider any other way of thinking (Isaiah 55:9). God knows it is unwise to try and teach wicked people anything. Unrighteous humans refuse to change because they think they are right.

God requires you to repent and change the way you think and live before He can teach you doctrinally, His way. God is reproducing Himself. Until you choose to be like God, it is useless. Now you know how and why God changes His doctrinal ways of teaching. God's will is conditional, depending upon your attitudes and desires in your hearts.

GOD'S DOCTRINE

The prophet Isaiah continues after you are told God's mind and ways are far superior to yours, how He teaches doctrine by seeking God on your part, *"For as the rain comes down, and the snow from heaven, and returns not thither, but waters the earth, and makes it bring forth and bud [flowers – plants], that it may give seed to the sower, and bread to the eater: So shall my word be that goes forth out of my mouth, it shall not return to me void [empty], but it shall accomplish that which I please [God's way], and it shall prosper [succeed] in the thing whereto I send it. Instead of the thorn*

[harm] *shall come up the tree fir* [evergreen – eternal], *and instead of the briar* [hurts] *shall come up the myrtle tree* [Immorts], *and it shall be to the Lord's name* [equal to God], *for an everlasting sign that shall not be cut off*" (Isaiah 55:10-13).

This doctrinal teaching is just the opposite to *The Old Covenant Law of Moses* which is filled with curses and death. Christ's *New Covenant* can make you perfect with no curses, but it still doesn't make you equal in God's image. Comparing *The Old and New Covenant* to God's doctrinal teaching is the best of all.

God's doctrinal teaching, like *The New Covenant*, has no curses but actually makes you Holy like God. God's method of teaching doctrine makes you Holy which is without any blemishes and is completely pure. Wow!

God's doctrine gives immortality in Paradise which eternally prospers. It is God's *first and last covenant*, The Alpha and Omega, God calls *The Everlasting* (Eternal) *Covenant*, "*Ho, Every one that thirsts* [free choice], *come you to the waters* [called ones] *and he that has no money* [free]; *come you, buy, and eat; yea, come, buy wine and milk without money and without price* [no cost or Loss of Life]. *Wherefore do you spend money* [to buy] *for that which is not bread? and your labour* [works] *for that which satisfies not? Harken diligently to me* [God], *and eat you that which is good* [God's Glory], *and let your soul* [Life] *delight itself in fatness* [growth]. *Incline your ear* [to hear], *and come to me* [God]: *Hear, and your soul* [life] *shall live* [Eternal]; *and I will make an everlasting* [Eternal] *covenant*

with you, Even the sure mercies [forgiveness] of David” (Isaiah 55:1-3).

God’s doctrinal teaching from the beginning of the creation as well as *The Covenant in The New Heaven and The New Earth* is *The Everlasting Covenant* to make you in God’s image. Truly God The Father, and Christ The Word of God, are The Alpha and Omega (Revelation 21 and 22).

Psalm 51:1-12 covers God’s *Everlasting Covenant* and how God gives mercy. The mercy King David received was God forgiving David and God continued to give him God’s Holy Spirit (Psalm 51:11).

David also asked God to cleanse and purge him of his sins and make him whiter than snow (Psalm 51:11). God did so by having his son from Bathsheba die and have war all his life because of having Bathsheba’s husband killed. God did purge or cleanse David, but kept him as His son.

God in *The Everlasting Covenant* hates animal sacrifice. Here is what sacrifice God desires and wants, “*The sacrifices of God are a broken [humble] spirit: a broken and a contrite [grieving, penitent] heart, O God, you will not despise*” (Psalm 51:17).

God’s doctrinal system exceeds Moses’ *Old Covenant* and even Christ’s *New Covenant*. Covenants which God sponsors have detailed purposes and conditions.

All Covenants are forever but those being fulfilled or

completed vanish or God changes them according to His will and pleasure. From Genesis to Revelation God has only one goal and purpose which gives God and His angels great pleasure, as you read. God from Genesis to Revelation has one goal – to make man in His image.

CHAPTER 8

GOD'S IMAGE HIS SON

No man (human) has seen God or heard His voice (John 5:37). Whose voice or word do you hear as The Word of God? You have proven scripturally God's voice is God's Holy Spirit (Hebrews 3:7).

ANGELS AND HUMANS

Angels are spirits. God is a Spirit so all angels were made from God from His Spirit. God also of His Holy Spirit, God's voice, also makes man's spirit perfect (Hebrews 12:23). Both angels and humanity have God's Spirit.

Man was a little lower than angels as humans who are flesh. Flesh dies and returns to the dust but your spirits like angels go back to God who gave them (Ecclesiastes 12:7). It is God from His Spirit who gave humanity and angels of His Spirit.

You now know it is God's Holy Spirit who created all things which was in Jesus (I Peter 1) as well as all repentant people who have received God's Holy Spirit. Christ in you is the same Holy Spirit He had as The First Begotten Son and inherited all things. He, as The Author (God's Holy Spirit) received God's Holy Spirit (Luke 1:35) without measure.

Christ, as the first to contain every word of God, became The Word of God in the flesh, a human. You likewise receive the truth of God's words in part depending upon your hearts (I Corinthians 13:9). As individuals, you can only know truth in part but prophecy as well.

A ROYAL PROMISE

Romans 8:20 foretells you in the flesh have hope you are to become more than the angels into the liberty of God (Romans 8:21).

Liberty is freedom to choose to be whatever you choose to be in God's image, just like Him.

God as He told the judge and prophet Samuel, when the people asked for a human king, they were replacing Him as The Universe's King. God allowed Israel to choose a human king over your Father, God Almighty (I Samuel 8:7).

SONS OF GOD

To be a son of God is like any son of human parents they have the same D.N.A. Spirits have different D.N.A. than humans. God calls some angels sons of God just like any family with children daughters and sons with very similar D.N.A. Uncles, aunts, and tribes have the same D.N.A. but are less like the progenitors of the race. Some sons mutate in their D.N.A. to be just like The Father, almost like twins. They are like equals or an exact image of The Father.

GOD'S NAME

God, over and over again, states when humans follow God and His word, they do so in His name. Seth was a Son of God, but not God and able to have all the complete capabilities of God Himself, *“And to Seth, to him also there was born a son; and he called his name Enos: Then began men to call upon the name of the Lord”* (Genesis 4:26).

Genesis 5 lists all of God's sons in His name from Adam to Noah. Cain was excluded because he wasn't a son of God who called upon God's name. These sons of God were gods because they called upon God's name to be taught every word of God and in faith live by God's word. The simplicity in Christ is so wonderful and amazing words cannot describe it.

Paul understood Christ and who and what He really was, *“Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy [study of the universe] and vain [ego-driven] deceit, after the traditions [politically correct] of men [humanity], after the rudiments [physiology] of the world, and not after Christ. For in him [Christ] dwells all the fullness [totality] of the godhead bodily”* (Colossians 2:8-9). Wow! Christ is all that is exactly like your Father's Godhead. God's First Begotten Son in Greek is *“monogenus”* The Beginning One.

There is only one like Him and there will be none like Him, because God by His Holy Spirit gave your Savior all God's power, love, and sound mind. He carries God's name, as some angels do. The Angel of The

Lord is a mystical angel to many theologians. *The Bible* answers the question.

When Israel sinned and worshipped The Golden Calf, God would no longer lead them to The Promised Land. God sent an angel. Who was this angel? *“Behold, I send an angel before you, to keep thee in the way [God’s way], and to bring you into the place which I have prepared. Beware of him, and obey his voice [Holy Spirit], provoke [anger] him not: for he will not pardon your transgressions, for my name [JHVH] is in him. But if you shall deed obey his voice, and do all I speak, then I will be an enemy to your enemies, and an adversary to your adversaries”* (Exodus 23:20-22).

This angel is special. He does not speak in the name of The Lord, but actually has God’s name. This angel is a precise duplicate of God Himself and is called JHVH just like God The Almighty Father.

When this angel speaks, it is truly God speaking just like Christ is God speaking. Both, the angel, or Christ in the flesh, a human are theophanies. Some angels and Christ have God’s Name, JHVH, in them. My, my, how great and loving.

There are two types of sons of God. You are adopted like Shem and Enos to Abraham. You call upon God’s name to be in you by adoption (Ephesians 1:5).

You are adopted by Christ in you who carries God’s name, JHVH. He is God who always existed in God’s Holy Spirit but not as another being.

You as Gods' sons are adopted by Christ in you which is the simplicity in Christ.

Your Messiah, The Christ, is a theophany of God The Father in Him from His human birth. You receive God's Holy Spirit as an earnest (parts) as you call upon the name of God in prayer and faith.

CHAPTER 9

CHRIST'S DOCTRINES

You have learned God uses different doctrines with various leaders that God uses to accomplish changing methods to be in God's image. Christ has a commission to make you perfect without sin. To do so, you need to follow seven doctrinal truths.

REPENTANCE FROM DEAD WORKS

The Pharisees taught no repentance was necessary to be baptized. A baptism in Hebrew is a "mitzvah," celebrated when a child is 12 or 13 years old.

The child only has to be trained in *The Torah* with the added *Law of Moses*. Since he or she is genealogically from Abraham, repentance is not required. Only an education in *The Torah* is the only knowledge needed to be baptized, a mitzvah. The added *Law of Moses* in Deuteronomy was included as the added or rewritten law in Deuteronomy.

John, The Baptist prepared the way for Christ The Groom of The Bride, Israel. The Apostle did his job by adding repentance to be baptized. He told The Pharisees to repent and prove it by bearing fruit to reveal their repentance. *The Law of Moses* and *The Old Covenant* did not insist on repentance to be baptized.

***The Old Covenant with The Law of Moses* changed no one spiritually because its goal was to only tell what sin was but changes no one to be perfect.**

***The Old Covenant* was and is dead works as God has Isaiah write in Isaiah 1 (Isaiah 1:12-16). The entire *Torah with The Law of Moses* as Isaiah wrote, made no one clean or stop doing evil. That is the first foundational doctrine to come to Christ (Isaiah 1:16).**

FAITH TOWARD GOD

Paul said those saved are justified (forgiven) by faith. Faith varies with numerous beliefs. God justifies you from faith to faith. It is a spiritual process that grows from one faith (Belief) to another faith or belief (Romans 1:17).

You are told God's righteousness grows from faith to faith to be justified. That is why Paul said, "*Whatsoever is not of faith* [present belief] *is sin*" (Romans 14:23).

DOCTRINES OF BAPTISMS

Once you repent of works which cannot make you perfect, you then must seek God in faith, total trust in Him. Then you have shown fruit to be baptized. Now what baptism are you talking about, since you have proved repentance and faith is demanded to be baptized for you to become perfect?

You know the earth was baptized by water in Genesis

1:1-2. When God flooded the world was another baptism. When Israel crossed the sea it was their baptism. On and on in *The Bible* a baptism has a multitude of baptisms by God.

A surprise scripturally is that there are three types of baptisms to be saved. John, The Baptist speaks of three major baptisms to be saved. Read Matthew 3:11 to learn there is a baptism to repentance, Holy Spirit and Fire (Lake of Fire). There you have it.

Repentance, having The Holy Spirit as well as burning in The Lake of Fire all destroy sin to receive God's mercy. Romans 6:3-6 as you have read all who are baptized in Christ as Lord are also to be resurrected by repentance, Holy Spirit or by fire.

You know the baptism by fire is The Lake of Fire because Matthew 3:12 defines fire to purge sin His floor to gather the wheat that is left. Verse 12 ends by describing this fire is unquenchable.

LAYING ON OF HANDS TO JUDGMENT

Laying on of hands gives God's Holy Spirit as Acts 8:14-17 shows laying on of hands gives God's Holy Spirit. Resurrection of the dead is described in I Corinthians 15 describes the resurrection is a conditional process with every man in his order (I Corinthians 15:23).

The sixth doctrine is the judgment. This refers to God's judicial court system. Romans 10:6-10 plainly

details how you come to God's Court to be saved, *"But the righteousness which is of faith [already covered] speaks on this wise, Say not in your heart, Who shall ascend into heaven [all Jews]? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) Or, Who shall descend into the deep? (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead). But what said it? The word is nigh you, even in your mouth, and in your heart: that is, the word of faith, which we preach; That if you shall confess [not sins] with your mouth the Lord Jesus, and shall believe in your heart that God has raised him from the dead, you shall be saved. For with the heart man believes to righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made to salvation"* (Romans 10:6-10).

That is so simple and clear. When someone accepts Christ as The Messiah, their sins are forgiven. Matthew 12:31 declares all manner of sin shall be forgiven. When does this occur?

Ephesians 1:10 writes in the completion of the fullness of time God will gather together in one all things in Christ which are in heaven and earth. That is the final resurrection in John 5:28-29. This is the time of the judgment (Philippians 2:8-11).

In the final resurrection all are resurrected in heaven and earth to be judged as well as those alive. No one doubts Christ is Lord as they behold him in all of God's Glory as The Messiah.

All bow their knees and worship Him as Lord. They all confess and are forgiven their sins. It isn't sin that

is judged but the rejection and refusal to accept The Holy Spirit as the unpardonable sin. Read Matthew 12:31-32 which clearly tells you what is the unpardonable sin to be thrown into The Lake of Fire.

You have covered all six doctrines right to Eternal judgment who confess Christ is The Lord and have their sins forgiven by Christ's blood. Perfection is the seventh doctrine in Christ, which you have covered.

CHAPTER 10

GOD REPRODUCED

Only Christ is equal to God your Father and in His exact image (Hebrews 1:3). You read Christ is The Word of God's power. Christ had God inherit God's Holy Spirit which was the Father in Him.

GOD'S POWER

You know God's power in Christ is God's Holy Spirit which is God's power, love, and sound mind (II Timothy 1:7). Jesus said the same thing. John 5:29 Christ told you as only The Father has life eternal within Himself He has also given eternal life to Jesus as well. Christ now being equal to God can give life to others, too.

In addition, because of being The Son of Man, a human who by faith had no sin and was perfect, could therefore give Eternal judgment (John 5:26-27). God was Christ's Father from His birth from Mary His physical mother. The Messiah is the only legal Son of God and therefore only Christ can be exactly in the image of God The Father's precise D.N.A.

You with human fathers and mothers were adopted as flesh from your births to become equal like God by faith to be in God's image.

Your flesh becomes dust at the death of your bodies but it is your God-given spirits which inherit eternal life to be like God your Father. You cannot be Christ since you were adopted. There is only one Messiah to save the world.

Christ can be in you as The Father is in your Savior as well as in you by God's Holy Spirit. Christ said you are all gods if you have God's Holy Spirit.

Therefore you are also sons of God, *"For as many as are led by the Spirit of God, they are the sons of God"* (Romans 8:14).

Israel as you have read in Psalms are called gods just like you. How come? Israel only feared God but lacked the faith. You have faith as Christians. What was the difference?

You learned in Exodus 23 that the angel who led Israel in the wilderness carried God's very name, JHVH. Israel was led by God's Holy Spirit who was in that angel. Wow!

GOD IN YOU

Christ's prayer before His crucifixion in John 17 asks His Father that as The Father is in Him, that The Father also be in you making all of you one in God. I Corinthians 15:28 Paul writes that God's purpose is for the world to be all in all in God. The reproductive system by God differs widely according to each individual's heart.

You know God counsels with humans who He highly respects as Abraham. God asked Abraham's advice about destroying Sodom and Gomorrah. Abraham asked God if there were only ten righteous men in the cities, would He destroy them. God took Abraham's counsel and agreed not to destroy them.

What did God do when He hadn't created anything even the angels? God's only counsel was with Himself. Back to Isaiah 46:9-10 God relates from the beginning of history even to future prophecy His Counsel would stand, "*Declaring the end* [prophecy] *from the beginning* [history] *and from ancient* [pre-written] *times* [ages] *the things that are not yet done* [foretold], *saying, My counsel shall stand*" (Isaiah 46:10).

Very clear. God only had Himself to counsel to come to His loving conclusions. Being perfect (no sin) and Holy (no evil thoughts) God is pure, so His wisdom is without flaw.

PERFECT REASONING

How does God know He is right, the only one knowing good and evil? You are back to The Tree of Life and The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil.

It all depends upon the state of your heart. When your motives are only for good with no one being harmed, God then knows He has the truth. A clean and pure heart has no unloving motives. There is no evil or impurity in one's logic or reasoning. They are Holy and therefore divine.

No human in the flesh therefore can be a god or divine. Only God can do the work to reproduce themselves. He is the only perfect, sinless and Holy being with no flaws or impurity. For humans to call or think any human whether Mary, Christ's physical mother, or Jesus in the flesh Holy or God is in gross error or sin.

Until Christ was glorified when He was raised from the dead and went to The Father and clothed in God's righteousness, He could not be God as well as any other human being in the flesh. When anyone is in the flesh, even as a lamb, they are of the animal kingdom. The worst being a combination of a lion, bear and leopard.

NAKEDNESS

You know Adam and Eve were naked and didn't know it. The Laodicean Church in Revelation 3 also were naked and were unaware they were also naked. Babies do not know they are naked as Paul referred to The Corinthian Church as babes in Christ (I Corinthians 3). Nakedness is a state of having no clothes or covering. When a man and woman are naked, they expose their sex organs to reproduce themselves which is sin. Humans are too weak to sin, as well as their progeny, *"Wherefore, as by one man [Adam] sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned"* (Romans 5:12).

You did not receive death because Adam only introduced sin but each of you are appointed once to die (Hebrews 9:27). Jesus died, but His body did not see

corruption and in His flesh He was sinless which is perfect. To be nudists as adults is sin because you by your exposed sex organs reveal the weakness of your bodies to reproduce sin.

God permits sex between a husband and wife because it is the only way God can join them together as one flesh. Wow! Fornication and adultery is sin because God cannot join them together as one flesh. God is not reproducing a mixed species which is confusion or Babylon.

Only in a marital condition is nakedness accepted because God can make that couple one flesh, bone for bone and flesh for flesh. God is reproducing Himself but not some mixture of confusion.

THE RAINBOW

God is many colors from white to black. God biblically has a rainbow around His being. God covers the entire spectrum but does not mix the colors. God created the races. Satan tries to confuse them so you cannot tell one race from another. God loves all His created races and is never prejudiced one against the other because that is not God's love. God desires no harm to any race, but loves them all to be His sons.

THE SIMPLE TRUTH

The simplicity in Christ as The Author or your originator to Salvation is only God alone by God's Holy Spirit can make you one with your Father and Christ.

God is all and in all so only God is The Kingdom of God. When God's Counsel is fulfilled because it gives God pleasure, you all have the potential to become God's Sons.

This is The Gospel, The Good News that God's counsel will stand, for it is God's great love that is His pleasure. It is the simplicity in Christ!

BEGINNING BIBLE STUDY

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 2

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *BEGINNING BIBLE STORY*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
IN THE BEGINNING	1
THE SEVEN DIVISIONS	7
GOD'S WAY	13
ADOPTED SONS OF GOD	19
HOW GOD REPRODUCES HIMSELF	24
GOD'S FIRST COVENANT	30
CRIMES AND LAWS	37
A NEW NATION	43
GOD'S SEVEN BOOKS	49
THE WAY CONTINUES	54
SEARCH FOR THE FAITHFUL	61
GENESIS OF THE OLD COVENANT	67
THE TWO TEMPLES	73
THE THREE GOSPELS	79

CONTENTS

THE GOSPEL OF JOHN	85
THE BOOK OF ACTS	91
TIME OF SORROWS	97
BIBLE'S SEVENTH BOOK	107
HEAVEN ON EARTH	115

PREFACE

The Bible was written to be understood by babes (Isaiah 28:9-10). To the rest of humanity, the scriptures will remain a mystery.

God teaches knowledge to those who want to learn as newborn babies on their mother's milk. No debates, arguments, or dogmatic doctrinal insistence they are right.

Babies sincerely want to learn and are eager to do so. Then God can teach us a little here and there, an idea here and there until we truly understand what we are being taught. It is called doctrine. God's doctrine. We are all Beginners.

This book is entirely free and no money is accepted. Use your funds to aid the orphans, widows and those who are truly poor or helpless. Comments and criticisms are appreciated.

There are, now, three new CDs. They are in PDF format, which allows you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: God's Puzzle Solved, Part I, II, III, IV and V. CD #2: 29 Other Books. CD #3: Articles on various subjects.

We are sorry if countries outside of the U.S. charge horrendous tariffs for packages containing these books. Perhaps requesting CDs will be the answer.

Address: Art Mokarow, Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Website: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Books)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Articles)

INTRODUCTION

GOD DOESN'T CHANGE

As creator of all things (Hebrews 3:4) God can be whatever He chooses to be. As an Almighty Spiritual Being, Our Father has no Limitations. He is the I Am, the Existing One.

His character however never changes as being All Love who Has No Darkness whatsoever. He is only Light which reveals truth. Truth is fact and can be measured. Therefore, absolute faith in God is eternal (Malachi 3:6). When God makes up His Mind, that's it!

HUMAN WEAKNESS

When God made us from the dust of the earth, we did not have eternal life. That was a gift to come later. As dust even the wind can blow if it is strong enough to kill us as a tornado or even water to drown us. Humans are extremely fallible. We must also live within our allotted temperatures. We are well around 98.6 degrees extremes either way and we die.

Our human minds are extremely limited. God told Adam and Eve not to eat from The Tree of the Knowledge of Good and Evil because they would die. We from the beginning were mentally mature enough to know right from wrong. Adam and Eve, though grown, didn't know they were naked. Nudists believe the same thing, today.

Job 32:8 discloses we have understanding to be con-

scious of what we do, but lack the insight to know even how to govern ourselves. We are inexperienced intellectually. Science so-called has to change its viewpoint every so often when they learn by mathematical experimentation they are wrong. Science by mankind has no absolutes, which is why they call their findings theories.

A theory is a high probability but not an absolute. Our intelligence is very limited. To accept human science as truth is a gross error. Just look at today's world. Not one government from another comes to the same conclusions as to how humans should rule themselves.

THE BIBLE IS TRUTH

Many people recognize *The Bible* as God's Word, which we have just read is absolute truth. It is unchangeable as fact, but therefore must be provable. Believers study *The Bible* because their faith demands it. The question is, have we proven it?

Human science is a blind faith since it constantly changes. Godly science, which is Truth, must be predicated upon proven faith. The apostle Paul admonishes us all who believe in God's Word as written in *The Bible* to prove all things (I Thessalonians 5:21). Once we do, we should hold fast in faith to those things which are good.

Always, as Beginners, babes, we are ready to learn God's story and its truth.

CHAPTER 1

IN THE BEGINNING

The Bible writes with the first chapter, called Genesis. Genesis in the Hebrew means, “*in the beginning*.” In Latin, the word scientifically is “*genes*” as a beginning of life. Our human genes, our composite DNA is our beginning.

Any book written has a beginning, Alpha in Greek, and an end, Omega in Greek. God tells us He is the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end of His Word and story. We begin with God and end with God who builds all things. Can we prove it? (Hebrews 3:4)

OLD AND NEW

Why is *The Bible* two books and not one? Surprising perhaps to many, *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament* were necessary by God because of the human weakness as we have read humanity has been born with by our physical birth, “*Wherefore, as by one man [Adam] sin entered into the world, and death by sin; and so death passed upon all men, for that all have sinned*” (Romans 5:12).

Some believe because Adam sinned we all have to die.

No! Romans 5:12 Paul writes it is true Adam started death and everyone has to die, but not because of Adam's sin but our sins.

All have sinned and that is the reason all humans are appointed once to die (Hebrews 9:27). Our personal sins put us to death and no one else's.

The two books called *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament* in Hebrew and Greek are God's Two Witnesses Alpha and Omega. They tell God's whole purpose and predestined story. What story?

THE BEGINNING

***The Bible*, we are to discover, is written for children who are babes. God initially tells us He created the heaven and earth by His Spirit moving over the waters. At that time, there was no earth or heaven. All was in darkness [space].**

Besides God's Spirit moving over the waters, everything was pitch black. Then God commanded His Spirit, let there be light. That light was good, God's Glory (Exodus 33:18-19) which made the first day from darkness to light. Earth time was born from darkness to light so we can see.

Light allows humanity to see where we are and where we want to go. God has given us five senses with which we see, hear, touch, taste, and smell. We can use our five senses to be conscious of what is transpiring in our time frame. If not, we are in a dungeon in dark-

ness, knowing nothing like the demons.

Then God said, “*Let us make man in our image* [Spirit beings].” The Hebrew word “*image*” in English is “*Salem*.” It translates into ghost, shadow, or like a hologram, which is a reflection of a light beam.

It is a reflection or shadow of what the real being is to be. God is reproducing Himself for us to be like Him, in His Image.

CHRIST THE ANOINTED

The term Christ is not a name, but a definition of the Anointed One. It is a term for Royalty being anointed because of proving oneself faithful.

Peter, when asked by Jesus who He was, answered that He was The Christ, the Son of God (Matthew 16). Then our Savior told Peter God has revealed this to Peter.

We tend to underestimate what The Messiah told him. This was not automatic from Our Savior’s birth, but a body God was preparing to save the world (I John 4:14). Christ came to save the world.

God is the one who had to do the work to make Jesus an acceptable sacrifice for the sins of all of mankind (Hebrews 10:5). God’s Holy Spirit was in Christ from his physical birth by Mary (Luke 1:35).

Once Christ was baptized to fulfill all righteousness,

He had only three and one-half years to complete His destiny to his death and resurrection (Romans 6:3-5).

THE AUTHOR OF SALVATION

Hebrews 12:2 discloses Our Savior was the Author you scripturally begin to see the difference between *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament*. *The Old Testament* as a separate book was to bring you to Christ.

Once Christ came and by His works of faith by listening to every word God spoke to His Son by God's Holy Spirit was rewarded by His works of faith.

Then He was anointed as Royalty as Revelations 5:3-14 covers his Coronation.

Christ's coronation was followed with the praises that now the way to The Bride's Coronation was to follow (Revelation 5:10).

It is now God's first begotten Son who makes you priests and kings just like him. He is the author of the book of life. It is the marriage registry (Revelation 19:8-9). Wow!

THE OLD AND NEW

The Alpha and Omega is the beginning which is also the end. What began in Genesis concludes in Revelation 22. How easy for beginners. *The Old Testament* leads to *The New Testament*. The Alpha is the Omega. God does the work in the beginning as He

does in the end by God's Holy Spirit. His Son, The Christ, is God's Word by God's Holy Spirit and is also the Alpha and Omega (Revelation 22:12-13).

Now we know why *The Bible* has two books an *Old Testament* and a *New Testament*. *The Old Testament* brings us to Christ. *The New Testament* proves who He is so you have an example of a human son of man who by faith was sinless or perfect, like His Father (Matthew 5:48).

Christ is the Way to follow in faith as He was by faith. Humanity can be sinless if you have the faith to follow Christ's seven doctrines to perfection. It is God doing the work in you by God's Holy Spirit.

THE BIBLE CANNON

Cannon in Hebrew and Greek connotes a rule of measurement on how we become like Christ, the author of our salvation. It is an individual decision of each of you (Philippians 2:12).

The rule to measure is a little here and there, precept [idea] upon precept, until we all come to the stature, the maturity [growth] of Christ (Ephesians 4:13). Christ laid the foundation [Temple] we are to become like Christ the rock of Our Savior (I Corinthians 10:4).

The Bible is Holy because God's Word is in it as God's Holy Spirit reveals that Truth of God to you (John 14:14-17). Your Biblical journey continues as you have God by His Spirit leading you to the truth of the

***scriptures.* Remember, it is God's Holy Spirit, God's voice, which inspires us to learn God's truth from God's Spirit. Without the Spirit of God, they are just words, whatever the translation matters not.**

There are seven divisions in the two books of *The Bible*. Three in *The Old Covenant* and four in *The New Covenant*.

Seven denotes God's rest, a Sabbath, in *The Bible* which is where the scriptures begin and end.

CHAPTER 2

THE SEVEN DIVISIONS

What do *The Bible's* seven parts mean as God's Word? *The Old Testament* in Hebrew is TANAKH. Hebrew takes three consonants, which explains its three major parts, T.N.K.

TORAH, PROPHETS, WRITINGS

The Torah is the first five books, Genesis, Exodus, Leviticus, Numbers, and Deuteronomy. These five books cover history from the Creation to the nation of Israel under the administration of Moses, which is called *The Old Covenant*.

Next, the N stands for the writings and their writers. K covers the writings such as Proverbs and Psalms.

The Old Testament appears as an odd book to tell a story about God. What a mix of books written over thousands of years by a host of people. Could they really possess the Word of God? Does *The Bible* tell one story with one theme and purpose?

The Muslim faith calls *The Bible* "The book of the People" and that is true. Islam also accepts sections of *The Bible* as prophetic and Holy like Moses. They even accept Jesus as a prophet, but not The Messiah,

just like the Jews.

It is fact *The Bible* is the book of the people covering the entire world. The confusion and manifold interpretations of God's Word is founded upon human intelligence and the people's diverse Ideologies.

***The Bible* is purposefully written as God's mystery as well as Satan's mystery, called Babylon. God only reveals His truth to babes who are teachable as you have read (Matthew 13:10-13).**

Christ was asked by His disciples why He spoke to them in parables just like Proverbs or Psalms. Your Messiah told them only His followers as disciples [students] will comprehend the truth.

As they continued to grow in God's Word, they will even grow faster in knowledge [doctrine] and wisdom [a sound mind]. The rest of the world will even lose the knowledge they had (Matthew 13:13-16).

Now you know why *The Bible* causes such confusion in it's interpretation. God, with all His superior ways and wisdom, reveals His mystery to His chosen people.

The prophet Joel foretells the future as prophecy, explaining God's system of teaching, "*The Word of the Lord* [JHVH] *that came to Joel the son of Pethuel. Hear this, you old men [ancients], and give ear [listen], all you inhabitants of the land [Israel – God's people]. Has this been in your days [prophecy], or even in the days of your fathers [ancient times]? Tell you your children*

of it, and let your children tell their children [one to another], and their children [Tradition] another generation” (Joel 1:1-3).

Tradition, tradition is God’s answer. One generation to another passes the truth to the future generation, matters not if one is a prophet or not.

Those living during the time of a specific generation, like Joel, are to pass on what that generation heard from their prophet. That is why translations are made where even includes Gnostic writings or written history.

You know as people tell their stories as more get involved, the truth becomes a mixture of false information and the facts. That is why the Old Testament fastidiously was copied one word after another. Just a smudge by a word had to affix the copier’s name next to it.

That is why the Dead Sea Scrolls written about 200 B.C. was almost perfect when compared to older writings. Mistakes were very few.

The real problem with *The Old Testament* is the Masoretic text written from the Hebrew created by the Jews in the Babylonian captivity. One Hebrew word can define many meanings.

Before written script, where writing was pictorial, a picture, it was more accurate. That is why archeology is so vital to compare to get to the truth.

Let us recapitulate. We know Christ spoke in parables, or proverbs. The priesthood continually sing as even *The Bible* writes in Revelation (Revelation 15:3). All sang throughout *The Bible*, repeating the truth of God. Even The Song of Moses, as in Deuteronomy 32.

Psalms or songs reveal God's truth. The Song of Solomon is called the Song of songs because Solomon gives the prophecy of Christ's bride and His coming.

***The Bible* is a composite of God's Word by prophecy, history, songs and parables. Tradition, tradition, tradition.**

Humans make copies over the centuries and make mistakes and even errors. As time passes, as Christ told you, misinformation grows until the facts are lost. How can you be sure of truth when you read any up to date book? You can't.

Only God reveals His Word as Christ told you, only God reveals the Truth of His Word by God's Holy Spirit (Luke 1:35 and John 14:16-17). That's it.

BIBLICAL TRUTH

In Matthew 4, Christ answers Satan how one can know fact from fiction. He claimed proof of His Messiahship was He lived every word of God.

Satan only quoted parts of *scripture* which was the truth, but not every word in *The Bible* relevant to the subject (Matthew 4). To get to the truth of *The Bi-*

ble, there must be agreement in every word of God, in *The Old Testament* as well as *The New Testament*. What the translation you use states the facts must be in agreement no matter what part of *The Bible* you study. Then you have God's word. This is God's science and not just a theory.

God, to preserve His Word, made sure you do not misinterpret the facts of His Word. He uses songs, parables, proverbs, history and prophecy to be sure you have every word of God for every doctrine of His Word.

The details of the translations you study doesn't count because God's Ways are better and higher than your human ways. God will always out-think you each and every way you try like Satan to out-think Him.

GOD'S WAY

The seven divisions of *The Bible* proves God's rest by living every word of God. Jesus said unto the people before Lazarus was resurrected an amazing truth, "*I am the resurrection, and the life: he that believeth in me though he were dead, yet shall he live. And whosoever liveth and believeth in me [by faith] he shall never die [eternal life]" (John 11:25-26).*

Christ told Martha He was the last day because whoever believes on Him in faith shall not die. Hebrews 1:1-2 relates the same thing Christ told you. Martha knew by the prophets all will be resurrected on the last day (John 11:24).

Christ was the last days. Jesus defines the last days for you. Here is what Our Savior told them, “*Yet a little while is the light [truth] with you. Walk while ye have the light [truth], lest darkness come upon you: for he that walketh in darkness [no facts] knoweth not whither he goeth. While ye have light [Christ], believe in the light [by faith], that ye may be the children of light*” (John 12:35-36).

The seven divisions of *The Bible*, *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament*, are in complete agreement. *The New Testament* defines *The Old Testament* and *The Old Testament* foretells *The New Testament*. Both are the word of God.

CHAPTER 3

GOD'S WAY

The Torah, the first five books of *The Bible*, in Hebrew means the path, or, the way. It is exactly what Jesus told us. The ways of God have to be in agreement perfectly to be God's truth, His word.

GOD'S HOUSE

As usual, Christ as God's Word makes God's way simple to understand. Jesus speaks right out why *The Bible* was written to the world. After Jesus preaches the golden rule, "*Therefore all things whatsoever ye would that men should do to you, do ye even so to them: for this is the law and the prophets*" (Matthew 7:12). This is a mouthful.

Everything written in *The Law* and the prophets Our Savior came to fulfill [complete] as He announced in Matthew 5:17. Christ, in one statement explains what He meant in Matthew 5:18. Not one jot or tittle will pass away from *The Law* until all of it is fulfilled.

Christ clearly told you what He meant by keeping the golden rule which you just read. Paul backs up Christ's definition of fulfilling *The Law* in Romans 13:10, "*Love worketh no ill [harm] to his neighbor: therefore love is the fulfilling of the law.*" That is just

what Jesus told you. Why did He describe how the world should behave between each other?

Spiritual growth is loving your neighbor so much you do not cause any harm to them whatsoever. That shows one therefore loves God above all else which is the great *Commandment* in Deuteronomy 6:5.

Even The Apostle John wrote the same doctrine in I John 3:23. That is three witnesses. All three witnesses certify the golden rule to love everyone and do no harm to anyone. Then you have God's love. Why is it so important to Love God and His Creation?

Following The Golden Rule Christ warns why love fulfills *The Law* and the prophets, "*Enter ye in at the strait gate: for wide is the gate, and broad is the way, that leadeth to destruction [death], and many there be which go in thereat: Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it*" (Matthew 7:13-14).

The Way, *The Torah*, first five books describes the Way to the Gate to enter God's House where God will dwell with man (Revelation 21:3). A gate is just the entrance to God's House [Temple]. What is this gate?

We read that God will dwell with man in The New Heaven and The New Earth. What are the gates? "*And had a wall great and high, and had twelve gates, and at the gates twelve angels, and names written thereon, which are the names of the twelve tribes of the children of Israel*" (Revelation 21:12). The *scriptures* define the

scriptures. *The Bible, The Old Testament and The New Testament*, is a perfect fit.

The straight gates represent the twelve tribes of Israel. Israel is a gateway to enter God's House and property. God's Way is very narrow and straight. The less detours [sin] the better.

The wide and broad way is easy and pleasurable which leads to death. *The Torah*, which concludes with the book of Deuteronomy, is *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses* administered by him.

God's House is Holy and is The Temple of God. In The New Earth the Temple is God, Our Father and Christ (Revelation 21:22). God and Christ are the Alpha, beginning, and the Omega, the end.

It is God's Glory, all of God's Goodness, which dwells in The Garden of Eden and will also be so in The New Earth in New Jerusalem, the Mother of us all (Galatians 4:26).

God's Ways in Isaiah 55:8-9 are far superior to ours. Humanity follows the easiest path and way, which is the most pleasurable. Mankind follows self-survival, the easiest way we can find. That is not only human, but all the animal kingdom does the same.

GOD'S PLEASURE

God also only does what is pleasurable. Here is God's heart and motivation for His Ways, "*Declaring the end*

[Omega] *from the beginning* [Alpha], *and from ancient* [archeology] *times the things that are not yet done, saying, my counsel shall stand* [occur], *and I will do all my pleasure*" (Isaiah 46:10).

Humanity's pleasure and God's pleasure are diametrically the opposite. Why? God is Holy, the Epitome of all Goodness, (Matthew 19:17). Mankind is born to sin as Paul wrote all have sinned and must die once, (Romans 5:12) (Hebrews 9:27).

The broad human way leads to death but God's superior way leads to eternal life and salvation, "*Hearken unto me* [God], *ye stouthearted, that are far from righteousness. I bring near my righteousness; it shall not be far off, and my salvation shall not tarry* [stop]: *and I will place my salvation in Zion for Israel, my glory*" (Isaiah 46:12-13).

Quite a summation. The world's way to survival ends in death, but God's method and way is life evermore in Paradise. New Jerusalem is God the Father's wife and Mother of us all (Ezekiel 16).

You have come quite a way in understanding *The Bible* as God's Word. Why does God go through so much effort to seek His pleasure and exactly what is God's Way to accomplish His overall goal?

When people read a study or study a book, it has a theme or objective. What is God's goal?

We are told in Romans 8:14 that as many as are led by

God's Holy Spirit, they are the sons of God. What is a son of God? Read the book, Sons of God.

You are about to discover there are two ways to be God's sons. One way is to be adopted as we humans are adopted from human parents. The greater way is to be born of God as a father directly from God's seed.

Adam was God's creation, born of God personally with no other parents. Eve came from Adam's body, so Adam and Eve have God as their Father. No human parents as you have. That is why Paul wrote Adam was a figure [image] of Christ. Adam, Eve and Christ have God as their only Father (Romans 5:14).

ADAM'S CHILDREN

Eve had given birth to Seth, Abel's replacement and Seth had Enos when men began to call upon God's name which is to seek God and His Ways.

Adam chose death, knowing better, just like Christ. "*And Adam was not deceived, but the woman being deceived was in the transgression*" (I Timothy 2:14).

Wow! Adam wasn't a transgressor, only Eve was. She followed Satan, but Adam did not. Adam chose death to follow his wife and knew better that he would also die. Adam chose to die because he Loved his wife, just as Christ did later.

CHAPTER 4

ADOPTED SONS OF GOD

What is the difference between Christ a born son of God from God, The Father and those of us who are born from two human parents? Christ had God's Holy Spirit from his birth without measure, where we need to Seek God and desire Him and God's will (Luke 1:35, John 3).

HUMAN SONS OF GOD

Adam was God's son from creation as a figure of the Messiah, but did not eat of The Tree of Life. Christ from birth had life given to him by God Himself. "*For as the Father hath life in himself, so hath he given to the son to have life in himself*" (John 5:26).

You do not have God's Holy Spirit from birth. You are only given man's spirit, which has understanding different than other animals.

Animals, by the need to survive, are driven to do so even at the peril of their lives. You as a human are of the same animal kingdom driven to survive, but also have spiritual understanding of what you are doing. Animal life lacks this spiritual comprehension.

The question for you as a homo-sapiens is, do you fol-

low your drives to survive, or decide to obey what your intelligence tells you? You have a weakness and are born to follow your human nature to survive. You, however, are not born to know good and evil, which is the truth.

Every time your human nature has a desire, you tend to follow it like any animal, even though you know what you are doing. You were born to sin because you do not know good and evil unless you are taught or learn from human experience.

Lacking God's Holy Spirit, you cannot know truth from yourself. You need to eat the fruit from The Tree of Life by your free choice to do so.

Everything you do is in part a little here and there because it is a matter of choice as you come to know good and evil by being taught and accepting the lesson or by what you experience in your life. Human sons of God without God's Holy Spirit call it science.

Science is predicated upon counting plus or minus like any computer in your mind or electronic computer. It is all mathematics.

You either add one and one or subtract one minus one. It is simple all humans do so. You understand by measurement through your five senses. You learn as homo-sapiens by what you sense.

Some humans believe they have a sixth sense to know what is good or bad. It is all your choice as individu-

als because each of you experience differently.

We know John 9:41 Christ said you are not held responsible for your sins when you do not know better, like any animal. That is why your sin is not the unpardonable sin, but is when you reject or turn away from God's Holy Spirit (Matthew 12:31-32).

Rejecting God's Holy spirit is blasphemy because it is God's voice which is holy. Christ listened to God's Holy Voice sent from heaven as his Father's Word. Jesus was God's Word, which was sent to Christ from heaven.

You are different from your Savior since you can only learn from God your Father as you desire to, and therefore must seek Him with a right heart. There you have it.

You, as opposed to Christ, must learn in part, here a little, there a little, precept [idea] upon precept as little babes drinking milk from your mother's breast.

Your alphabet is given to you to speak in part. God gave Adam and Eve the gift of speaking in tongues. God's language is spatial we see the whole picture. We call it inspiration.

When you look at a beautiful picture, person, or scene, we are inspired. You see the whole, which is perfection or even better, it is Holy like God is.

Holiness is beyond not sinning, perfect, but actually

without a **blemish** [flaw] and **pure** [transparent]. You cannot as Christ was Glorified in God's Image when He went to heaven and was crowned (Acts 2 and Revelation 5).

You will be glorified [all God's Goodness] when you are clothed in **God's righteousness** (Revelation 19:7-8). You will **no** longer be **naked** as Adam and Eve or the Laodicean church.

GEOMETRY IS DIVINE

The early ancient humans, the Sumerians, regarded geometry as divine. Geometry is the measurement of squares, circles, triangles, and angles.

In mathematics, the most learned level is Calculus. Calculus means how to calculate all the parts into one whole. That is why Paul wrote you only know in part and even prophecy is in part. No human but Jesus comprehended the whole. Then Paul writes an amazing sentence, "*For now we see through a glass, darkly [a shadowy reflection]; but then face to face [no mirror]: Now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known*" (I Corinthians 13:12). Do you grasp what Paul wrote?

If you learn **truth** in parts or even prophecy in parts, why do you insist you are right? All of you have a long way to go. When you are in your Father's exact **Image**, you will be a duplicate of God and Christ, **knowing what is holiness and perfection**. You will look in a mirror and see God and your Savior. Wow!

That is why God hates idolatry so intensely because it isn't God. For humans to claim other humans as god is idolatry. They do not even represent God because none of you know how God really is. Wow!

THE BIBLE MYSTERY

The real *Bible* mystery, “Christ – In You,” is how God Our Father is in image [likeness] heart [motivations] and His mind. Anything less is idolatrous.

Beginners Bible Study must have its genesis in the beginning to understand the end.

As adopted (Ephesians 1:5) children [babes] of God, our spiritual growth can only be in pieces or parts, determined by your heart's desire to learn.

You first must come to know what your idols are. Is it this life, a person, celebrity, power, money, or yourself, like Job?

Until you are ready in all of your heart's desire to seek God first and foremost, you cannot be taught or truly learn. All your personal idols must die.

As Christ said, if you love your human life first above God, you will die. Eternity is a gift from God by “Christ – In You” which is exactly what God is (John 20:31).

CHAPTER 5

HOW GOD REPRODUCES HIMSELF

God is reproducing Himself. That is the theme or the complete *Bible Story*. It is the whole picture written in seven divisions. What is that whole picture?

THE BEGINNING

Did God make them perfect in the beginning, yes and no. Adam and Eve were sinless from their creation, but were still naked.

We know nakedness is lacking God's complete goodness. God's goodness versus humanity's goodness is beyond perfection as we know. God is Holy without flaw or a blemish.

God, to reproduce Himself in us, demands perfection and holiness. From the beginning, God only required them to eat from the right tree. Spiritually, they were naked and had to mature to the stature of Christ (Ephesians 4).

SKIN IS A TENT

Peter The Apostle called our skin a Tabernacle, which is a tent (II Peter 1:13). A tent is portable, small or big, and can be changed by the owner. We are born in a

baby's body, to our teens, adulthood and old age. In each case, our flesh changes against our own wills.

God changes not, unless it is His will to do so. Your will constantly change even against your own thoughts. Your fleshly desires are too strong to survive above all else.

Facing the fact you do not always control yourself, even when you know better, is your human weakness. Your heart's desire overpower you at times when you refuse to do what is right.

The rush to stay young is primary for you as a human until you learn there is much more to your life than your Tabernacle existence. You repent and totally desire in your heart to make a serious change in the way you think.

Being old or elderly is great when one learns there are much better things to come than this life. The older you are to the death of this life, the better for good things to come. In *The Bible* it is called The Gospel, good news.

The seven divisions of *The Bible* as you learned follow the path or way how God does the Work of God His Way. It is His will.

WEAKNESS OF MIND

Your human mind is highly frail or weak. Depending on the state of your heart and desire decides what

kind of mind you will have. The spirit in man God gave you to have is completely changeable upon your desires, which are idols. Notice what your Savior told you, “*When the unclean spirit is [psychotic or not] gone out of a man [demonic], he walketh [lives] in dry places [no nourishment], seeking rest [no stress], and findeth none. Then he saith, I will return unto my house [Tabernacle] from whence I came out [human thinking]; and when he is come [like he was], he findeth it empty, swept, and garnished [nothing left]. Then goeth he, and taketh with himself seven other spirits [way of thinking] more wicked than himself, and they enter [he agrees] in and dwells there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first*” (Matthew 12:43-45).

You as a human, unguided by God, are very weak and subject to sin. A mind spiritually given understanding must have purpose and be profitable. If not, as God said in Genesis 11:6, your thinking process will imagine whatever you want to do. Fantasy and fiction can cause nothing but Babylon, or confusion.

In time, no one will agree with anyone. Emotion, our desires will take over and be your masters. You will be slaves. Humans are spiritually naked as physically weak. In the universe, humanity thinks you are the only intelligent ones.

MORE THAN ALIENS

So close and yet so far. Science has arrived to accept alien beings on other planets, even those you have not discovered. They even acknowledge they are smarter

than you are and more advanced. Why do they have to be alien? If they are advanced intellectually, why can't they just be angels who have always dwelt with us?

Satan, with his angels, can be bad angels and God's angels good ones. Both have always been since earth's formation with us.

Wicked angels are called demons and good ones carry a variety of abilities as God has given them. Either as spirits [different dimension] than you are. They are even more powerful than you are. They can change your thinking or understanding many ways: you must choose how you want to think. You have liberty from God to choose how you want to think.

God reveals His ways Biblically. God declares He unifies out of love by harming no one. He gives liberty to everyone to choose and only rules by being the greatest servant.

Satan always blames others to be victims causing confusion, chaos and war. No rest just torment and pain. In spite of all your drunkenness, God gives you tools so you can be healed and whole like God.

God's will and counsel concludes the best gift He can give you is to reproduce Himself. That is God's will from the beginning to make man in His Image. That is what *The Bible* is all about. You are to be God's sons, just like Christ. The book of the people, the world, in great detail covers the whole story from beginning to

end. If you have eyes to see and ears to hear the seven scriptural paths show you the way.

THE GENESIS

The first book of *The Bible*, Genesis, is now history which is historically provable. Genesis starts with the creation of heaven and earth. On the fourth day, time on earth started by the sun, moon, and all of the stars.

To this day, new stars and galaxies are growing while others are dying as black holes.

The book begins with God dwelling in The Garden of Eden with the first homo sapiens with spiritual understanding.

Eve, as the mother of all living, grows into millions of humans. At The Tower of Babel, in the land of Shinar, God divides their languages and in Peleg's time divides the races and nations on continents so each could grow to seek God and His Ways as they freely chose.

Only Noah and his family followed the One True God while the rest had many gods and wanted to know who was The Almighty One called El Elyon, God of hosts or all.

All the world copied polytheism with many gods, choosing Trinities as the mightiest or divine. The world was in chaos and wickedness with no one in agreement but Noah with his family.

To save extinction of humanity, God flooded the world, starting over with Noah and his three sons, Shem, Ham and Japheth. Only Shem's family remained faithful and grew as a people until Abraham.

Abraham obeyed God and lived by every word God taught him (Genesis 26:5). From his progeny came Israel. They were God's first chosen people because of the promises made to Abraham. He was the Father of the faithful.

The Israelites became a nation to be led by Moses and *The Old Covenant* with *The Law of Moses*.

God's first step in making man in God's image was underway. You are ready to learn that the first covenant by God is not *The Law of Moses* known as *The Old Covenant*.

CHAPTER 6

GOD'S FIRST COVENANT

Many denominations and theologians need to study their *Bibles* to see if there is an unknown *Covenant* God gave before the days of Noah. The mystery of this *Eternal Covenant* is not mentioned and defined until the time of king David.

THE GARDEN COVENANT

When God told Adam and Eve they could eat of every tree of the garden including The Tree of Life, this was more than a teaching. He also told them not to eat from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil for they would die.

Amazing, this is an amazing *Contract* with God and Adam and Eve, the world's first homo sapien parents. Very few scholars are aware this *Covenant* was the first *Contract* God made with mankind.

Moses knew of this Godly *covenant* because The Song of Moses reveals God wanted Adam and Eve to be perfect and holy, right from their creation. At this point, they were not very knowledgeable, since they did not even know they were naked (Genesis 2;25). They were like the nudists who were not ashamed of being naked. They did not know that God wanted

them clothed in His glory. At this point intellectually, they did not know what was good or bad. God wanted to reproduce Himself by making man in His Image.

At this moment, they were like any animal who didn't know right from wrong. God did give them of his breath, the spirit in man to become the first homo sapiens or have human intelligence.

Other creatures of God, like Neanderthal man, could not understand but functioned like other animals by instinct. Adam and Eve were the first animals to become homo sapiens to be teachable.

Other animals are extremely difficult to teach. They can be trained to duplicate human-like actions but do not have the voice box to speak and clearly communicate. Science acknowledges that truth in their latest research.

Adam and Eve could actually speak so they could communicate and be taught like any human child. God wanted to clothe them in His Glory which is all of His goodness.

One could be highly intellectual and pass in perfection all IQ tests, but still not know good from bad. Read how God teaches His Doctrines. Moses wrote a Song so Israel would never forget how God teaches you His Way. God wanted everyone in heaven, the angels, and on earth, humanity to know this Song. This song is for everyone born on earth as humans (Deuteronomy 32:1).

“My doctrine [God’s teaching] *shall drop as the rain, my speech* [God’s Word] *shall distil* [cleanse] *as the dew* [vapor] *as the small* [light] *rain upon the tender herbs, and as the showers* [gentle] *upon the grass: Because I will publish* [*The Bible*] *the name of the Lord* [Disclose God]: *Ascribe* [Learn] *ye greatness* [Almighty] *unto Oor God”* (Deuteronomy 32:2-3).

What a Father. God does not force His students but they must want to learn from God and seek_Him so they would be eager to learn the best they could. God’s *Covenant* always allows and gives free choice like He did with Adam and Eve. God does not teach anyone until they are ready to learn and deeply want to be taught.

Rain, a symbol to make thing grow, is always gentle and refreshing like dew in the morning. God’s way of teaching is to make it as peaceful and enjoyable as possible for everyone not harming even the most fragile herb.

God hates to be dictatorial. He does not try to frighten you nor scare you into the truth. God knows children know best when they are deeply interested.

Adam and Eve were naked and the Laodicean church in Revelation 3 as well. Both wanted to learn on their own and were Naked. Neither were ashamed and need to first learn only God can teach you who He is and how He created All things.

Remember, God wants you to sing songs so you do

not forget. You are to pass it on from generation to generation. This *Godly Covenant scriptures* define as *The Everlasting Covenant*. It is eternal, beyond time. What God taught Adam and Eve in The Garden of Eden is unending, without time, to continue beyond the written *Bible*. Read King David's detailed instruction after he committed adultery and murder.

Moses, Isaiah, King David, as God's prophets all knew this *Everlasting Covenant*, "*For as the rain cometh down and the snow from heaven, and returneth not thither, but watereth the earth, and maketh it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower and bread to the eater. So shall my word [God's Holy Spirit] be that goeth forth out of my mouth: it shall not return unto me void [Unprofitable], but it shall accomplish that which I please [pleasure], and it shall prosper [succeed] in the thing whereto I sent it"* (Isaiah 55:10-11).

This is what Moses' Song revealed as well. Isaiah names this *Covenant* and how it is to be administered, "*Incline your ear [listen], and come unto me [Seek God]: Hear [strict attention], and your soul [life] shall live: and I will make an everlasting covenant with you, even the sure mercies of David" (Isaiah 55:3). If Adam and Eve ate from The Tree of Life, this *Everlasting Covenant* would have gone into force. God, by His Word, the Holy Spirit guarantees Salvation in Paradise eternally.*

AN OXYMORON

An oxymoron is any act done by a human which does

just the opposite of what one is trying to do. An example would be going into debt further and further to prosper. Look what Jesus said in the Lord's prayer concerning debt, "*And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors.*" Quite simple. Debt is sin because one owes someone for their property or assets. Not to pay our debts is a heinous crime in God's eyes.

When Adam and Eve chose freely to make up their own minds of right and wrong, it was impossible. They didn't know the difference.

If God allowed them to eat from The Tree of Life, they would know better and therefore couldn't be deciding on their own what is good and evil. That is an oxymoron. It is the height of foolishness. God had to exile Adam and Eve until they repented.

THE EVERLASTING COVENANT

Psalm 51 is a Song written by King David when Nathan the prophet told David he sinned with Bathsheba and murdered her husband.

David immediately cries out for God to forgive his sin. He did not justify himself for one second. He didn't blame anyone else but himself--he instantly repented.

Then David pleaded, "*Wash me [Baptize] thoroughly [a death] from mine iniquity [harm], and cleanse [make perfect] me from my sin.*"

He then openly admits his transgression and he can

never forget what he did. David admits by sinning he broke God's *Covenant, The Everlasting Covenant*. He knew his weakness to sin that he was born that way just like homosexuals.

Then he admits God wants him to be perfect and holy or pure. Again, he pleads for God to make him happy and to forgive and forget his sins. David is teaching you how merciful God is.

The rest of the Psalm David details how to make him clean with a good heart by purging [burning out] his heart to be pure and not to take God's Holy Spirit from him. Without God's Holy Spirit, he could not know right and wrong. He wanted to keep drinking the healing water from the leaves from The Tree of Life, God's Holy Spirit. Read Psalm 51 in every detail of God's Word.

Here is how King David ends his Song, "*Then shall thou be pleased [God's pleasure] with the sacrifices [Spiritual] of righteousness [God's], with burnt offering [pain] and whole burnt offering [to die]: then shall they offer bullocks [stubborn ones] upon thine altar [Holiness]*" (Psalm 51:19).

God's first *Covenant* just like Adam and Eve to go through life on their own ways leads humanity into many changes in God's future Contracts with mankind.

CHAPTER 7

CRIMES AND LAWS

God's first *Covenant*, *The Everlasting Covenant*, was not a *Law*. *Laws* are for criminals or sinners. The first *Law* God imposed upon humanity as a *Covenant* with judgements was Noah's *Law* at the time after the flood.

RAINBOW COVENANT

God's *Covenants* before the flood had no *Laws*. From creation until the flood, no *Law* was imputed or codified. After the flood, God gave His first *Law* demanding death to anyone murdering a human. God gave *The Rainbow* as His signature. God looks like a beautiful rainbow and placed His whole being as ratifying this first *Noachian Law*.

LAWS AND ADMINISTRATION

Each nation uses a variety of ways to administer its *Laws*. Murder is handled differently in each sovereign nation. One government may not have a death penalty, while another does.

Thievery or robbery may be punished by chopping the criminal's hands off, while another may give time in prison. All cover the same sins, but both have a va-

riety of judgements.

God does the same thing, using the same *Law* for sin but changing the penalties. Why is this so and why does God permit the same thing with His *Laws* and *Covenants*?

DEGREES OF CRIMES

Logically, the worse a nation becomes, the more severe a penalty or judgement must be. In the United States, everyone had guns in the wild west, since they could be attacked by Indian Tribes or even robbers in towns, because of lacking civil protection. Each person was their own law.

Ways of keeping crime low were dependent upon one's source of protection. If one seeks God for safety, no weapons are demanded for protection. A Christian's faith is their protection, even to the death.

If God's system as protector is rejected, independent *Laws* are commanded to mitigate crime or make sin nonexistent. God's way always permits free choice with each person.

Free choice allows varieties of behavior. No two people are the same. Humans differing like animals can be like lambs, goats, oxen, lions, bears and leopards! Some are totally crazed like a combination of the three worst, lions, bears and leopards. That is a wide variety of humanity. God's people differ so dramatically, He must continually change the administration of His

Law. A *Law* is just a beginning to mitigate the crime and needs to be altered many times to help God's people.

Covenants are made to always direct you to be just like your Father. Approaches to doctrines can be altered and changed. People's beliefs and understandings are called ideologies because they are generated by human ideas.

Human ideas come from our imaginations. That's guessing. It is why Science deals in theories as opposed to absolutes. An absolute is a fact like a factor. A factor in arithmetic is a definite number like one. One plus one is two, which is a fact and therefore absolute.

The Apostle Paul simply tells you what a *Law* is in I Timothy 1:5-10. He begins by giving you the reason for a *Law*. Paul writes God's aim or goal for the *Commandment* is, "charity [Agape Love] out of a pure heart [transparent], and of a good [clear] conscience, and of Faith Unfeigned [Truthful]" (I Timothy 1:15).

The apostle first informs Timothy God began with the Commandments to teach Love [God's] which brings us to a pure mind, ending in faith.

Then Paul proceeded to define the purpose for a *Law*. He warns us *The Law* should be handled and administered to accomplish its lawful purpose.

The rest of the verses reveal a *Law* is given not for

righteous, growing people as Acts 10:35 defines, but for the unrighteous, carnal [beast-like] criminals who are willing sinners. Very plain.

Perfect people have no need for a *Law*. *Laws* are made because a society has criminals. They must protect the innocent and cause pain with added penalties, depending upon the serious damage done to a society.

SLAVERY

Slavery is the result of any society because they demand complete control. The more immorality, the stricter and more severe *The Laws*. The ultimate penalty is being put to death.

Strict, demanding laws do not make people perfect, but they do reduce the number who commit crimes. Some quit crime with a little pain, but those who become ferocious animals must be put to death.

Rehabilitation is not the job of humanity. They cannot know a person's heart only God does. That is why Christ said perfection [sinlessness] is only by God in Matthew 19.

Israel began with only *The Commandments* and sinned. Now *The Law of Moses* was needed to keep them from sinning with harsh judgements.

***Laws* had to be upgraded and impose harsh penalties to reduce crime for a civil society. Step two took a rewriting of *The Law* in Deuteronomy, which for the**

first time God's People had to return to slavery with every part and parcel of their lives dictated, just like Slaves.

ORAL LAWS

When smaller parts of *The Law* needed changes or a greater understanding, Moses took his father-in-law's suggestion to let the Elders [Older ones] add to *The Law* orally.

As Israel grew worse and worse, like their Gentile neighbors, more and more burdensome oral *Laws* had to be added as part of *The Old Covenant*. Obviously, when people become worse, *Laws* need to be tightened. They became burdensome and Israel had to go back into slavery. Even *The Fourth Commandment's* goal had to be changed. Exodus 20 *The First Commandment* had a goal of entering God's Sabbath Rest on God's Property.

After sinning, the rewritten *Law* in Deuteronomy, the Sabbath's Rest had to be found by going into the wilderness to come out of slavery.

Laws become very clear. *Laws* are only needed by criminals who are unrighteous, willfully committing sin. The guilty in an honest, Godly *Law* pays for the crimes and not those who are innocent as babes.

GENTILES AND FAITH

Christ recognized it was the Gentiles who had more

faith than The Israelites. When a Gentile centurion soldier for Rome had a sick servant, the centurion told Jesus He didn't have to come to heal the servant.

Just as the centurion's commands were obeyed, he knew just Christ saying His servant was healed was all that was needed. Here is Jesus' reply, "*When Jesus heard it, he marvelled, and said to them who followed [disciples], Verily, I say unto you, I have not found so great faith, No, not in Israel" (Matthew 8:10).*

That is just what you are ready to prove in Beginner's Bible Study. Your Savior turns to the Gentiles for faith.

CHAPTER 8

A NEW NATION

Christ turns to a New Nation more worthy. He does so as His Father's Spirit leads him to a people predicated upon faith. Who is this new nation?

A NATION

Nations are similar in DNA. Tribally, they are a family of people united together. God is building a family of sons of God as His family who are in His image. The DNA is spiritual, and not of physical composition, “*Ye also, as lively stones [a temple], are built up a spiritual house [nation], an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifice [not human], acceptable to God by Jesus Christ*” (I Peter 2:5).

This is God's House like God and therefore a Holy nation as God's Sons, “*But ye are come unto mount Sion, and unto the City [New Jerusalem] of the living God, the heavenly Jerusalem, and to an innumerable company of angels. To the general assembly and church [called-out ones] of the firstborn [sons], which are written in heaven and to God the judge of all, and to the spirits of just men made perfect” (Hebrews 12:22-23).*

Physical nations on their own as Adam and Eve are weak and will sin. The result of human nature is al-

ways death because of sin.

This spiritual nation can only be reproduced by God. Humans cannot by their works do not have the ability to become Sons of God a holy nation, “*Furthermore, we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection [Our master] unto the Father of spirits and live”* (Hebrews 12:9).

Now you have the whole story. God is reproducing Himself and is spirit (John 4). Only God can build everything, physical and spiritual.

THE SPIRITUAL NATION

God breathed into Adam’s nose the spirit in man as a homo sapien having understanding intellectually. Those repenting and aware of themselves cannot know good and evil become babes to mature like Christ who is in the exact image of God (Hebrews 12;1-3).

How did God reproduce Christ to be His first begotten son? You know from his birth, The Messiah had God’s Holy Spirit from birth in full measure [Every word of God] (Luke 1 and John 3).

Christ was the author of the book of life which is God’s Holy Spirit. God’s Holy spirit as God’s Power, Love and Wisdom is as we proved in Hebrews 3 to be God’s very Voice. Possessing God’s Word by His Holy Spirit is our doctoral teacher to understand as well as know what is right and wrong.

Intellectually, God has now granted us to know truth, spiritual truth, which is beyond human physical comprehension. What do humans lack with these spiritual gifts from God?

FAITH

How much truth do you want, a little, some, or every Word of God like Christ? With human science, it takes forever always increasing theories at the truth. What does *The Bible* teach? “*For Christ is the end [final goal] of the law for righteousness [God’s] to every one who believes. For Moses describeth the righteousness which is of the law, that the man which doeth those things shall live by them [human life]. But the righteousness which is of faith [total trust] speaketh on this [Holy Spirit] wise, Say not in your heart [desire], Who shall ascend into heaven? (that is, to bring Christ down from above:) Or, who shall descend into the deep [grave] (that is, to bring up Christ again from the dead) But what saith it? The word [Holy Spirit] is near you, even in they mouth, and in thy heart [personal desire]: that is the word of faith, which we preach” (Romans 10:4-8). Wow!*

You are justified by Faith without having Christ return to you. That is why Paul wrote in Romans 1:17, “*the just shall live by faith.*”

To be justified, is by your faith in trusting God Himself speaking to you by His Holy Spirit which is God’s Voice. Not having faith in God’s Holy Spirit is rejecting God Himself. My, my, now simple.

Faith reveals your heart's desire and what comes first. Either you Love God with all your heart, and with all our soul or life, and your might or not (Deuteronomy 6:5). That is faith!

Faith or trusting God as His Holy Spirit guides you in truth is proving our love for God. Wow!

You began like any creatures created by God (Romans 8:20-21). Adam received God's first gift to man, His Spirit in man to have understanding. Ultimately you are to become God's children or family. By God's second gift, you receive God's Holy Spirit to lead you to truth like Christ was led by truth His entire human life.

His example proved human flesh with its weakness to sin can overcome by God's Holy Spirit. It is God's Holy Spirit as His Voice teaching you as you desire Him throughout your human existence.

Your works are to follow as God teaches you in faith and absolute trust as you learn to receive every word of God just like Christ did in faith (Revelation 1:5).

It is faith which justifies your sins and leads you to be in God's Image as sons of God. Faith to faith leads you to Hope.

HOPE TO GOD'S RIGHTEOUSNESS

Hope, like faith, as you trust God's Holy Spirit in you, your Faith has substance and is not blind faith

like man's faith in himself without God. Your faith is proven by your spiritual growth which gives substance to your hope as well, "*And now abideth [lives] faith, hope, charity [Love], these three, but the greatest of these is charity [God's Love]" (I Corinthians 13:13).*

Love fulfills all *The Law* because love never fails (I Corinthians 13:8). God's love to trust God to the death is Eternal and never harms anyone in God's Creation or God Himself.

Christians do have Works. No physical works in any *Law* is demanded of God. Only *The Everlasting Covenant* to choose to eat from The Tree of Life God's Holy Spirit. Your works are spiritual not requiring any *Laws* which are to first lead you to Christ and finally God, Our Father.

GOD IS SPIRIT

God has no darkness in Him, humans do (I John 1:5). If we walk in darkness, we lie, and do not the truth (I John 1:6).

"*But if we walk in the light [see Truth], as he is in the light [God], we have fellowship [friendship] One with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his son cleanseth us from all sin" (I John 1:7).*

There is the truth about sin. Christ's blood as one person does not pay for your sins unless you have works. These works are not of any works of *The Law* but are spiritual works, faith, hope and God's love. All these

are heavenly gifts from God.

God's New Nation is not the physical works of any *Law* but God is a Spirit and you need to grow in spiritual works. God is a Spirit and wants to be worshipped spiritually by His Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER 9

GOD'S SEVEN BOOKS

You know *scripture* is divided into seven parts. Paul tells you you learn in part making every section vital for the truth. With Christ as our foundation, you are ready to grow into every word of God.

THE TORAH

The Torah before the written book of Deuteronomy was added to *The Torah* you have read was the Path or Way. We know Jesus defined it as the Gate to enter God's estate and House.

What house? God dwelt in the Garden of Eden a pleasant and beautiful well manicured, huge estate. The mystery was there was no physical mansion or palace where God dwelt.

God you know defines Himself with many attributes but only one name, JHVH, the I am. Every time, like King David wanted to build God a house, but what kind? David had a palace built for himself and God was amazed that David thought he could build a house for Him, the Almighty One God.

Jesus, on the other hand doesn't refer to a House of God, but only a gate to God's gorgeous garden. Why

not?

BEGINNING TO END

Just before The Messiah returns a great announcement is heard from a voice, “*Alleluia: for the Lord God omnipotent reigneth*” (Revelation 19:6).

Following you hear the Marriage of the Lamb, The Wedding Feast is to take place and the invitations must go out, “*And he saith unto me, write, blessed [happy] are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb. And he saith unto me, these are the true sayings of God*” (Revelation 19:9).

This wedding feast was actually set up by God Himself. This wedding announcement was made by God’s angel in Revelation 19:10. Listen to the way the angel ends this invitation to this great feast, “*I am thy fellow servant that have the testimony, a witness of Jesus: worship God: for the testimony of Jesus is the Spirit of prophecy*” (Revelation 19:10).

Christ’s human life on earth was prophetic. What he did, his behavior, Words and events witnessed who His Father, God Almighty was. He was God in the flesh by God’s Holy Spirit in Him as you have studied.

God Himself was in Christ doing the miracles Christ performed. It was just like Moses raising his staff and arms telling Israel to see the Mighty Power of God by dividing the waters of the sea. Moses wasn’t the power, just like Christ but it was God Almighty who

actually performed the miracles. That is why the angel said, **Worship God, Your Father.**

The Messiah's human life was prophetic just as you are to be a witness of Christ, your Husband. Jesus, the son of man lived on this earth as a prophet of the work His Father was doing.

When God comes to dwell on The New Earth, He proclaims He is ready to make all things New (Revelation 21:5). The former physical universe is destroyed in The Lake of Fire. Here is what God told John, The Apostle, "*And he said unto me, It is done [fulfilled prophecy]. I am the alpha and omega, the beginning and the end, I will give unto him that is athirst [desires] of the fountain of the water of life freely [Potential for the salvation of the world]*" (Revelation 21:6). This includes all the spirits since their flesh was destroyed in The Lake of fire. God is starting over what He did not fulfill in the beginning because of Adam and Eve's sin. What was the Alpha is the Omega, the end. The end is a new beginning. There is even much more.

Christ who was a prophetic witness with His life on earth now had a new commission, "*And, behold, I come quickly [at any time], any my reward is with me, to give every man [the world] according as his work shall be. I am alpha and omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last*" (Revelation 22:12-13). How could this be? There are two Alphas and Omegas. The *scripture* interprets itself.

When The Messiah returns here is his name, "*And*

he was clothed [a new outfit] with a vesture [garment] dipped in blood: and his name is called the word of God" (Revelation 19:13).

God Almighty dwelt in Christ as Christ in you by God's Holy Spirit as you have learned. God was in Christ as Christ is in you as God's very words. Both God, the Father and Christ are the Alpha and Omega, the beginning and the end. That is how Christ as well as God created all things.

God the Father was in Christ by God's Holy Spirit the very power, love and wisdom of God Himself. You are at the point in your *Bible Study* to answer where does God dwell in this new paradise on earth? John writes the answer to your dilemma, "*And I saw no temple therein [God's House]: for the Lord God Almighty [the one God] and the lamb are the temple of it*" (Revelation 21:22). This temple is a spiritual house just like The Apostle Paul said you are in I Corinthians 3:16 because you have God's Holy Spirit. God's Holy Spirit does the work because God's Spirit is God!

Christ clearly referred to the physical temple in old Jerusalem as God's House, "*And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence [out]; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise [business]*" (John 2:16).

God doesn't dwell in physical houses. Only God's Glory, God's goodness, enters a physical temporary dwelling. Since Judah corrupted God's House as well as Rome and made a business out of it, God's Glory did

not dwell in that temple built by Herod, an Edomite.

THE GARDEN HOUSE

In The Garden of Eden one could not see God's House because it was a spiritual house where God's Glory was by God's Holy Spirit. The voice Adam and Eve heard in the garden was God's Holy Spirit which was all of God's goodness (Exodus 33:18-19). No one has heard God's voice or has seen Him (John 5). Adam and Eve would have burned up since God is an all-consuming fire (Hebrews 12:29).

GOD'S GATE AND HOUSE

Now you understand the gate and the garden were physical but Adam and Eve could not see God who was a Spiritual house in the garden. Only Moses, Adam and Eve knew by God's shining Glory where God's House was located.

Adam and Eve in the presence of God's Holy Spirit saw an amazing awesome brilliant light just like Moses who had to wear a veil over his face which shined. They feared God just as Moses did and Israel when they came near God's mountain. God, by His Holy Spirit warned Moses not to come too close lest they burn up.

God warned Moses not to let the Israelites get too close to Mount Sinai. He even covered His Glory with a dark cloud (Exodus 19:9). *“And thou shalt set bounds unto the people round about, saying, Take heed*

to yourselves, that ye go not up into the mount, or touch the border of it: whosoever toucheth the mount shall be surely put to death" (Exodus 19:12).

The gate at Mount Sinai at the base of the mountain could kill them. To go up the mountain was certain death.

In The Garden of Eden just to get to the gate to God's house, a Temple was deadly. That is why Jesus said in Matthew 7 only a few would find God's gate to His house.

The Torah is the way and path to enter that gate to be able to come into God's House for The Wedding Feast. Beginner's Bible Study is ready to learn about the way and path to that House of God to be able to come to The Lamb's Wedding feast.

CHAPTER 10

THE WAY CONTINUES

Adam and Eve knew the whole way of God since they lived in God's garden. They knew paradise and God personally by God's Holy Spirit. God spoke with them and told them about the trees in God's garden. The Tree of Life gave them eternity in God's house and estate. The rest of the trees except one kept them well and healthy. Only The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil could bring death.

THE CORRUPTED WAY

After the flood, the world population was centered in the Mesopotamian southern area. In ancient history, they were called the Sumerians, which means "*the black-headed people.*"

Biblically, they lived in the land of Shinar at The Tower of Babel (Genesis 10:10). Babel in Hebrew is the same in Sumerian, spelled Babil. It means Gateway to heaven or God's Holy House.

Sumerians were the mixture of the children of Ham and Japheth, who married the children of Shem who were loyal to God. These three were from Noah's three sons Shem, Ham and Japheth. They all were of

one language as one nation, called the Sumarians.

They were ruled by their emperor, Nimrod, a son of Kush who was black. The Sumerians feared as their populations grew, they would become divided and no longer be one nation.

They knew from God's prophets like Enoch, that of the progeny of Noah's three sons the Messiah would come and rebuild the garden of Eden on earth, "*And Enoch also, the seventh from Adam, prophesied of these, saying, Behold, the Lord with ten thousands of his saints, To execute judgement upon all [the world], and to convince all that are ungodly among them of all their ungodly deeds which they have ungodly committed, and of all their hard [strict] speeches which ungodly sinners have spoken against him*" (Jude 14-15).

That world knew the entire Gospel of Christ was to come from their children. Nimrod with his wife, in their tongue was called Semiramis. They accepted her as the queen of heaven who produced her son who she married.

They built The Tower of Babel as the gateway to God's House to keep them united as one people with Nimrod their savior to come. Religion was to keep them together, as races and nations have done throughout history.

This united empire was the first head of what *The Bible* called The Beast. A Beast connotes war and destruction like any wild animal, a lion, bear or leopard.

This empire was composed of all three wild animals scripturally known as the Mark of the Beast (Revelation 13:18).

They corrupted the truth since God's savior and Messiah hadn't come as yet. They began to worship God's creation instead of God. In fact, Peter wrote the prophets as well as the angels when the Spirit of Christ would come (I Peter 1:9-12). They knew more truth of the gospel of Christ than we do today.

The corruption of God's way was to worship the creation, including man, instead of God the Creator. They knew the one God and Creator of all things who they called the SkyGod who went off to heaven, "*Because when they knew God, they glorified him not as God, neither were thankful; but became vain [ego-driven] in their imaginations, and their foolish heart was darkened [rejected truth]*" (Romans 1:21). They worshipped this false temple called a ziggurat.

Here was the outcome, "*Professing [preaching] themselves to be wise [the political elite], they became fools. And changed the glory [God's goodness] of the incorruptible [Holy] God into an image [idol] made like to corruptible [dies] man, and to birds, and fourfooted beasts [lions, bears, leopards] and creeping things [snakes]*" (Romans 1:22-23).

Under Nimrod, by corrupting the truth of the real God, made man, like Nimrod, The Messiah to come and even worshipped his mother, Semirames, as the Queen of heaven, God's wife.

To protect this false kingdom of God, the first Beast power went to war. The book of Revelation claims seven heads of this beast would rule the world (Revelation 17:1-5). They are called Babylon the great, the mother of harlots and Abominations of the Earth [world].

This false queen of heaven was the genesis, the beginning, of all the world's abominations. It began in the land of Shinar at the Tower of Babel.

Zechariah the prophet writes of this false Messiah to curse the world, *"Then I turned, and lifted up mine eyes, and looked, and behold a flying roll [scroll]. And he said unto me, What seest thou? And I answered, I see a flying roll, the length thereof is twenty cubits, and the breadth thereof ten cubits. Then said he unto me, This is the curse that goeth forth over the face of the whole earth: for every one that stealeth shall be cut off as on this side [scroll] according to it; and every one that sweareth shall be cut off as on that side according to it. I will bring it forth, saith the Lord of hosts [El Elyon – God], and it shall enter into the house of the thief, and into the house of him that sweareth falsely by my name [El Elyon]: and it shall remain in the midst of his house [curse], and shall consume it with the timber thereof and the stones [false temple] thereof"* (Zechariah 5:1-4).

From The Tower of Babel in the land of Shinar this world curse continues to our time. It all began in the land of Shinar (Genesis 10:10). Zechariah discloses the same place, *"And he [the angel] said unto me, To*

build it an house [Tower of Babel] in the land of Shinar, and it shall be established, and set there upon her own base” (Zechariah 5:11).

BIBLE STUDY

As Beginners of this study of *the scriptures* you are just at the beginning. *The Torah* is the way and the path to God’s house. *The Torah* is far more than *The Old Covenant Law of Moses*. You will find *The Law of Moses* was added to *The Torah*, Deuteronomy, because of another corruption of God and His truth.

Humans are weak in the flesh. The problem becomes, is God too demanding to insist for you to overcome sin? This is exactly what Our Father told Cain when his attitude toward God and Abel was a sin in his heart, “*And the Lord said unto Cain, Why art thou wroth [angry]? and why is thy countenance fallen? If thou doest well, shalt thou not be accepted [sacrifice]? and if thou doest not well [good] sin lieth at the door. And unto thee shall be his desire [in heart], and thou shalt rule over it.” (Genesis 4:6-7). Quite clear and simple to understand.*

A REAL MESSIAH

God told Cain when he became angry that God rejected Cain’s meal offering. Cain proved he had no faith or belief in His Father who was God.

Abel was chosen because of his faith and not what type of sacrifice even though a lamb symbolized the future

Christ, “By faith Abel offered unto God a more excellent sacrifice than Cain, by which he obtained witness that he was Righteous” (Hebrews 11:4).

Even though Abel knew The Messiah would be like a lamb, it wasn't the type of offering which counted but the faith and trust he had in God. Later, Enoch foretold this prophecy of a coming Messiah, of which Adam and Eve were told in Genesis 3:15.

Eve's sin would demand a future seed or child from her to defeat Satan and his lies. Cain and Abel knew this foretold by Adam and Eve. That is why Enoch preached it as well as all of those who knew their father and forefather Adam could have been The Messiah if he ate from The Tree of Life instead of following Eve's sin.

Now, a Messiah was necessary to prove a human could be sinless if they knew God's Word in total. That is why The Messiah had to be one given every word of God, just like Adam who was a figure [knowing truth] of Christ (Romans 5:13).

If Jesus made the smallest sin by a lack of faith, He could not be our Messiah, but He in faith never sinned to the death. He had to perform all the prophets and *The Law* prophesied about Him (Matthew 5:17).

As Bible researchers, you now know the path and way *The Torah* teaches you by God's Holy Spirit, which is God's voice. You need to discover who will be listening to God's voice like Adam and Eve did, but sinned

and were cut off from God's Holy Spirit, the Tree of Life.

CHAPTER 11

SEARCH FOR THE FAITHFUL

You know faith is the justification for sin. Why? All have sinned as Romans 5:12 reveals. The Messiah, whoever he is, must be sinless by his faith (Romans 1:17).

Our prophesy concerning The Messiah continues but by faith they must live every word of God without sin. The Christ must be the author writing the book of Life without sin.

THE SAINTS AND FAITHFUL

Saints and faithful are two different types of those being saved. Paul wrote the epistle of Ephesians describing the detail of living like Christ, “*Paul, an apostle of Jesus Christ by the will of God, the saints which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful [fearful] in Christ Jesus*” (Ephesians 1:1).

Clearly Paul refers to the two types of Christians, the saints and the faithful. Saints in Greek is Hagios, “*the holy ones*,” and the faithful in Greek is Tsedaq, “*the righteous*,” who are justified by faith.

The faithful are those who are accepted by God because they fear God and are seeking His righteous-

ness. These faithful are those Christians who follow Peter's definition as he said in Acts 10:35.

The Saints have works of faith who have endured persecution and even death. The faithful are growing spiritually but as yet are not persecuted.

SALVATION A PROCESS

The very fact that "Christ – In You" is a maturing process from a babe in Christ to adult maturity reveals a great diversity among Christians.

Since Christ came to save the world (I John 4:14) this system of teaching by God, Our Father by His Holy Spirit is all-inclusive of everyone in the world. God's method of teaching His creation to be children of God begins with repentance.

God leaves all others on their own with many life opportunities to change and repent. God gets personally involved with His Holy Spirit only when you desire God as your master and king.

The hosts of the world are as diversified in their minds as there are people. God loves all humans but not the evil they do. He hates the sins but not the sinner. They are blinded to truth because of having hearts with sinful desires.

With billions and billions of people who are all different, God works with each individual in a different way.

BIBLE COVENANTS VARY

Your *Bible Study* has arrived where one man, though a sinner, seeks to obey every word of God even though a sinner.

Abraham understood God's *Everlasting Covenant* gives mercy even to sinners who repent and seek God and His righteousness. Abraham followed *Noah's Covenant* with God not to commit murder, but as well repented to follow every word of God by God's voice.

The difference between Christ and Abraham is Jesus in the flesh never sinned. Up to Abraham's Time, God had two *Covenants*. Any future *Covenants* of God are good, just and holy. Why?

Laws are for sinners. The first worldwide *Covenant* had no curse or penalties. Humans left to themselves will die because flesh is only made from dust with no life. The first *Covenant* had no curse or penalty. God's loving *Covenant* offers eternal life as a gift. Flesh dies because humans of themselves have no life as Christ said in John 5:26.

Starting with Abraham, the father of the faithful, is just a first step. Abraham repented because he witnessed his works of faith to finally obey God's voice became the genesis of eternal life.

LIFE AND DEATH

Only spirit has life but as with the angels, they have

different rewards according to their works of faith. The Seraphs and archangels are blessed the most. The rest of the angels have smaller rewards. Angels grow just like humans. Angels do not die because they are all spirit.

Humans are a little lower because our flesh is corruptible but they are not. They will be judged by you for a very good reason. You die, not exist except for the spirit in man God gave Adam and Eve and their progeny. Now you know why humans have a bigger reward than angels.

You are going to judge angels because they know God's word and can't die. God is reproducing himself to be like God as sons of God. To be like God as His sons takes more faith than the angels who already possess life evermore.

We are created once to die (Hebrews 9:27) but have a much greater reward than the angels because like Christ we need to exercise far more faith.

Bible Study to be true leading to God's righteousness requires a multitude of ways to achieve God's Image. The seven Bible parts are clues to the truth of God considering the diversities of humanity.

That is the reason Christ said He did not come to destroy *The Law* or prophets but to fulfill them. Every prophet and *Covenant law* is demanded by God as a way to becoming like Him. God as you proved doesn't change but you do. Just your skin changes with ev-

ery change you make in your life from babes to the elderly. Your skin will stretch or can get skinnier by cutting down on your eating habits.

The human mind you proved is extremely frail and changes by what is important in your heart desires. Biblically, God's doctrines are all designed to get you as a human back on track because you are subject to sin.

Sin causes death and God introduces doctrines and *covenants* to be on the straight and narrow path. From Abraham's day to Noah, God had no *Law* except for murder.

After the flood, because human beings in worldwide numbers would end up committing genocide.

PELEG'S DAY

We learned that God divided the cultures, races, nations and tribes with their own land inheritance. By doing so, smaller groups can live at peace because disagreements are less between them. Not because fewer numbers reduce sin, because all sin. The benefit is less people have less possibility to degenerate. That is why God allows death when a community vastly increases it's crime numbers especially murder.

God did not allow Israel to receive The Promised Land until the Amorites completely became wicked and violent. That is why God waited for Israel to wait over four hundred years in Egypt in slavery.

You are over halfway in our study for Beginners to study the *scriptures*. From Adam and Eve's time, God only decided to prove only one person who is human with God's knowledge would finally live by every word of God. To do so, that human would have to have faith and completely trust Your Father in heaven to lead and teach you.

God's story, *The Bible*, is not a religion until you know God and who you are worshipping, "*And he gave some apostles; and some prophets; and some evangelists; and some pastors and teachers [elders]; for the perfecting of the saints, for the work of the ministry, for the edifying [building up] of the body of Christ" (Ephesians 4:11-12). From the post-flood period, we are ready to study God's Word how God keeps reproducing Himself with the whole world.*

CHAPTER 12

GENESIS OF THE OLD COVENANT

The Old Covenant wasn't commanded to be kept with *The Law of Moses* for any goodness on the part of Israel. They couldn't give up their old Egyptian ways of worshipping many gods.

Just as God told them not to worship idols, they built the golden calf as one of their gods. *The Law* was necessary to give for their transgression of obeying idols and not God, the Creator. They were carnal criminals fearful of all gods but wanted to know who was the mightiest.

ALL ALONE

Just during the short time of forty days of Moses being with God, Israel on their own sinned with the golden calf. God had just told his children don't build any idols.

Immediately they disobeyed God and should have been put to death which God wanted to do. Moses knew *The Everlasting Covenant* with mercy and no curses with penalties to follow.

In fact, the world knew from the time of Adam and

Eve, especially with Cain, God showed mercy to him. When God was going to put them to death, because of *The Covenant* made with Noah, Israel should have been put to death.

Moses, well aware of Noah's contract with God and the world, pleaded with God for mercy. He knew *The Everlasting Covenant* with grace.

Because of Moses, the faithful leader, God gave mercy to Israel. Israel deserved death but as with Cain, God gave mercy even though his penalty was too harsh. Cain pictured himself as a victim. All Cain had to do was repent as you have already proven.

God above all else with His great love for humanity deeply desires for all of you to repent. God is longsuffering (II Peter 3).

God, because as Israel was a rebellious child, had to create a motivation for them to obey God (Isaiah 1:1-2). God knew by their attitudes had to be severe enough to have little choice but to obey Him. By Israel following every jot and tittle of *The Law*, they would be blessed above all nations. No nation would have it so good that all nations would choose to follow them. Israel was to be a witness, an example, to the world so everyone on earth would seek God. Only God knows who and what He is and how to reproduce Himself.

GOD'S RESPONSIBILITY

Our physical parents are the only individuals who

gave you birth. No one else but God is even more responsible. He created everything. He made you with limitations with certain death. Above all beings, God is responsible for all humans but also includes the entire universe.

God from His overwhelming love for you He also knows in the long run God knows how to save the world. God who is eternal has no time limit. The potential is forever. God knows what He alone began and how to perform His will.

***The Old Covenant* is an intermediate *contract* to teach Israel to seek God and no one else. *The Law of Moses* had to be unique. For any thinking person was wiser to obey rather than the smallest sins with *The Law's* curses. The smarter should choose to obey God. This *Old Covenant Law* should teach them to love God because of all of its wonderful blessings. This *Law* should make them righteous.**

***The Law* as Paul said if any one *Law* could change them, *The Old Covenant* should, “*Is the law then against the promises of God? God forbid for if there had been a law given which could have given life, verily righteousness should have been by the law*” (Galatians 3:21). This was the most good, just and perfect *Law* to bring them to Christ and Salvation.**

RECTIFYING A WEAKNESS

Now you know *The Old Covenant Law of Moses* was only to correct a human weakness. Your flesh is de-

signed to acknowledge you of yourself cannot be good or perfect.

Perfection demands an extremely strong will or complete faith in God. A *Law* is only made for people who do not know how to be sinless. As Paul wrote all have sinned, none are perfect.

The Law of Moses was so finite depicting clearness and purity of one's physical body they couldn't even come into the camp of Israel. Nightfall pictured they were in the dark. Israel needed to be brought into the light of God's truth. That Truth was Christ.

Galatians 3:24 openly declares the purpose of God was only to bring them to Christ. *The Old Covenant Law of Moses* was only a shadow, a reflection of good things to come (Hebrews 10:1-2).

A reflection has only a light shining on *The Law* which is written for people who haven't repented but they do fear God. They are seeking God's righteousness but are carnal. They aren't even babes in Christ. *The Law* is their righteousness (Deuteronomy 6:25).

THE MAGNIFIED LAW

The Magnified Law is an enlargement of more light which extends into justice, mercy and faith as Christ said in Matthew 23:23. They are the weightier parts of *The Magnified Law* which *The Law of Moses* didn't possess. *The Old Covenant* gave no mercy whatsoever (Exodus 23).

Because of mercy, justice and faith growth becomes eternal. Carrying greater weight tithing and the smaller demands of *The Law* are subject to justice [judgement] mercy and faith.

Tithing is secondary to mercy and justice just like all the requirements of *The Law* and its most minimal demands. *The Everlasting Covenant* has no judgements or curses. *The Magnified Law* of Christ was a crossover from physical laws to spiritual.

Spiritual laws do not deal with the physical flesh and its weakness because mercy and justice are included.

Justice considers all factors of each human of what they do and can do, mercy or forgiveness of sin is determined on an individual basis. That is what Paul wrote in Philippians 2:12-13, “*Wherefore, my beloved, as ye have always obeyed, not as in my presence only, but now much more in my absence, work out your own salvation with fear and trembling. For it is God which worketh in you, both to will and to do of his good pleasure.*”

TO THE JEW FIRST

Christ explained this crossover from *The Old Covenant Law of Moses* to *The Magnified New Covenant Law* which concentrated on justice, mercy and faith, “*Ye [Samaritans] worship ye know not what: we know what we worship for salvation is of the Jews. But the hour cometh, and now is [presently], when the True Worshippers shall worship the Father in Spirit and in*

Truth [no shadow or darkness]: **for the Father seeketh such to worship Him. God is a Spirit and they that worship Him must Worship him in Spirit and in Truth**" (John 4:22-24).

That's it. Couldn't be clearer. Salvation begins with the Jew and *The Old Covenant Law of Moses*. With Christ telling the Samaritan woman as He was speaking *The New Covenant* began as Christ announced.

From that time, God was not dealing with *The Law of Moses* but a Spiritual system which ceased from the time of Adam and Eve. *The New Covenant* was to begin through Gods' Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER 13

THE TWO TEMPLES

What is the difference between *The Old Covenant* and *The New Covenant*? It is the Temple. Christ answers the Pharisees after he chides them for making His Father's house, the temple, a place of business and it will be destroyed.

“Destroy this temple [Christ], and in three days I will raise it up” (John 2:19). He was referring to His body as the Temple. It was after His death and resurrection that *The Law of Moses* changed to a spiritual temple which was internal and not external as a physical building.

GOD'S HOLY SPIRIT

I Corinthians 3:16 Paul wrote it is God Himself who makes the temple spiritual by His Holy Spirit. It also includes the body of Christ, the Church of God combines the Bride of Christ as one body with God. What God had joined together let no one put asunder as Christ said in Matthew 19.

Christ said the same in his prayer to God, “That they all may be one; as thou Father, art in me, and I in thee, that they also may be one in us: that the world may be-

lieve that thou hast sent me” (John 17:21). **God’s Holy Spirit is the Temple in Christ and His bride.**

Christ didn’t always exist as a being. It was Our Father as His Holy Spirit which always was, is and will be. No one else always had life but God as John 5 told us.

God’s word is God as John 1:1 definitely tells you God Himself is God’s Word and no one else. God’s word was the voice of God as you proved in Hebrews 3:6.

God’s Spiritual temple was God Himself by His Holy Spirit is the Temple of God’s House. As long as the physical Temple stood, Christ could not be a priest on earth, “*For if he were on earth he should not be a priest, seeing that there are priests [Levites] that offer gifts according to the law*” (Hebrews 8:4). That however changed in 70 C.E., “*For the priesthood being changed, there is made of necessity a change also of the law*” (Hebrews 7:12).

Christ not only said in three days He would be resurrected but also the first physical temple had to be destroyed before His Melchizedek priesthood could be on earth. This new priesthood changed *The Law* from *The Old Covenant* to *The New Covenant*. This *New Covenant* gave precedence to mercy, justice and faith.

It was God’s Word not Christ’s which made Him and the church of God a spiritual temple. That is why God and Christ are the Temple of God in Revelation 21:22. Christ did not become God’s Word until God’s

Holy Spirit became flesh a human being (John 1:14). This word was God's Holy Spirit filled with the Glory of God which is all of God's Goodness (Exodus 33).

This summarizes the full truth how Jesus became God's first begotten son as God Himself in Christ reproduced Himself.

ELIJAH TO COME

The spirit of Elijah was in John the Baptist. This spirit was in Elijah and John the Baptist. Now that Holy Spirit was to do the same work that worked in Elijah, *"But ye shall receive power, after that the Holy Spirit is come upon you; and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem [the Jew first] and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost parts of the earth [World]"* (Acts 1:8).

Elijah preached to Israel. John the Baptist was Elijah to prepare the way for Christ. Now, the church of God, his Bride, announces the coming Wedding feast as Elijah.

What a wonderful message and invitation. So far, *The Bible* isn't so much a religion of worship with rituals but an education of the way of God in the synagogue [God's school] to learn how to worship God.

To do so, the Temple in Jerusalem had a court for Israel and The Gentiles. God, through Christ, was to change those who were His people to The Gentiles, a more worthy nation than Judah.

Until all is fulfilled and completed, the gentile court is to remain unmeasured, “*And there was given a reed like unto a rod: and the angel stood saying, Rise and measure the Temple of God, and the altar, and them that worship therein. But the Court which is without the temple leave out and measure it not, for it is given unto the Gentiles: and the holy city shall they tread under foot forty and two months”* (Revelation 11:1-2).

Until The Gentiles fulfill their time, their court is to remain open for future growth until the end of the Tribulation and their works are manifested. Then they will receive their rewards.

Israel has their Courts measured and they cannot rule until The Gentiles complete their days of fulfillment. Israel will only be restored to be first until the millennium begins. Then once again the Jews will be first and they will teach the world to come to Christ.

During the millennium with The Jews first, the marriage feast announcement will go out to the whole world good and bad (Matthew 22:16). As the whole world hears The Gospel with the Jews, and the Bride who is resurrected in the first resurrection preach the Gospel only Gog and Magog rebel (Ezekiel 37-38). Christ destroys them and the Time of the white throne judgement begins. After the white throne judgement, the New Heaven and the New Earth are united as one.

The Jews cannot accept Christ as their Messiah at this time because of Jacob's will and prophecy. Genesis 49:10 remains forceful for The Jews will possess the

scepter [government] and be teachers of *The Law of Moses* until the Christ gathers all Israel together. This doesn't happen until all are gathered the two sticks, Israel and Judah once again.

The Old Covenant Law of Moses is still being kept for Judah to teach. The Gentiles receive the Holy Spirit and worship Him in Spirit by God's Holy Spirit without *The Law of Moses*. This is The Gentiles time to be first. *The New Testament* starts that journey.

Bible Study has four divisions to cover. The four gospels, Acts, the Epistles and Revelation. These four have three purposes.

NEW TESTAMENT GOALS

First *The New Testament* must fulfill and preach the truth of what *The Old Testament* witnesses. Second, it proves Christ is the Messiah and third gives the prophecy and history of how The Gentiles do with becoming the first in witnessing God's truth.

Does the Christian church of God succeed in becoming sons of God? Do they remain faithful? Do they follow the way of Israel or do they do better? What is their end?

HUMANS ARE HUMANS

Amazing, it really doesn't matter. As Paul said in Romans 5, all have sinned and one isn't better than the other. Without God being there constantly, as any lov-

ing Father so desires, a child left to themselves loses.

With free choice, the road can be rough and painful. God is reproducing Himself and must give His children Liberty just as He has.

Christ warned in Matthew 7:14, “*Because strait is the gate, and narrow is the way, which leadeth unto life, and few there be that find it.*”

Humans because of free choice will find great pain and difficulty becoming like God left to themselves. The dichotomy is God to reproduce Himself demands our liberty so the answer is faith and who will you trust, God or yourself?

Until you completely seek God and His Will, only a remnant will find the way in faith.

CHAPTER 14

THE THREE GOSPELS

Matthew, Mark and Luke are called the synoptic gospels. Each follows the chronology of Christ's life from birth to death. Each, however, has clues and purposes differing from each other.

MATTHEW IN HEBREW

The Gospel of Matthew is claimed to be first written in Hebrew. That would be expeditious. This gospel was special for the Jews and all Hebrews.

Matthew's gospel was written to the Hebrews because it was given to The Jew first and then to The Gentile. The generations written to are not truly chronological. This Jewish gospel was written to define why Christ was born.

The number seven is God's Sabbath Rest, but these generations are fourteen years. Each seven years denotes God's grace witnessing the sign of God's Sabbath's rest in the Paradise of God.

Seven times two is fourteen, doubling God's witness of God's rest as a sign. Two witnesses by God is a proven truth in God's Law and Court. Abraham to King David is fourteen generations, when God reaffirmed the

***Everlasting Covenant* with King David genealogically (Isaiah 55:1-3). David would always have a seed, a child alive, to inherit his throne as The Messiah.**

David loses the kingship to The Gentiles for seventy years. After Judah returns to Jerusalem to rebuild the temple, The Time of Jacob's Trouble begins.

It is fourteen years, a sign of two times seven as a court witness when Jacob does not rule over David's Throne. One more fourteen generations leads to The Messiah, the Christ, to reestablish King David's Throne as the promise made to Abraham. (Read the book, *Chronology of Christ* for details).

The final fourteen generations reveal Christ as God's first begotten son. All of the accounts of Christ's life are to be read to the Jew first as Messianic Jews.

MARK'S GOSPEL

The second synoptic gospel follows the life of Christ as Matthew leads you directly to your Savior. Notice how the gospel of Mark is introduced, "*The beginning of the gospel of Jesus Christ, the Son of God*" (Mark 1:1).

Amazing, this synoptic gospel is not the gospel of God. This gospel is all about the Beginning of Christ's gospel. Some theologians believe this gospel was written before the others.

The truth is, Matthew was first to the Jew and now

the Gospel or good news is for the whole world. Mark writes not only to the Jews but also to The Gentiles and should be studied that way.

Over time, most Jews rejected Christ except the remnant Messianic Jews. The Gentiles weren't doing too well either, and mixing in with Gnostic teachings started by the Jewish spiritual elite.

The Gentiles follow the Gnostic Gentiles from Egypt, Ethiopia to India and others.

Luke, The Gentile medical doctor, believed he should write about the truth of Christian belief and faith. His gospel is introduced with the truth of Christ as the real Messiah, *“Forasmuch as many [Gnostics] have taken in hand to set forth in order a declaration [Dogmatic] of those things which are most surely believed [faith] among us [Christians], Even as they delivered them unto us, which from the beginning [genesis] were eyewitnesses [present], and ministers [servants] of the word; It seemed good to me also, having had perfect understanding of all things from the very first, to write unto thee in order; most excellent Theophilus, That thou mightest know the certainty of those things, wherein thou hast been instructed [preached]”* (Luke 1:1-4). This gospel is unique.

Gnostics by this time of Luke's writing was gaining control of Christianity and dogmatically forcing Christians to believe as they did. If not, like Diotrophes, kicked them out of the church. John, The Apostle, warned he would straighten out Diotrophes'

teaching and controlling God's people with no free choice (III John 9-11).

Diotrophes in Greek means, "*friend of Zeus*," where the name Jesus came from instead of Yashua in Hebrew, the Savior. Luke corrects the gospel when corruption befell the gentile Christian church as Jude wrote, "*Beloved, when I gave all diligence to write unto you of the common salvation, it was needful for me [Jude] to write unto you, and exhort [cry out] you to contend [faithful] for the faith which was once delivered [beginning] unto the saints [persecuted]" (Jude 3).*

Luke wrote to the **EXCELLENT THEOPHILUS**, which in Greek means **Lover of God**, or, a Saint. Was Theophilus a person or was he writing to the saints like Jude?

Either way, Luke's gospel covers the same events as Matthew and Mark. Since then, the Gnostic gentiles even claimed to be the true apostles of Christ as Paul said.

AN APOSTLE

Hebrews 3:1 writes, "*Wherefore, holy brethren, partakers of the heavenly calling, consider the apostles and high priest of our profession, Christ Jesus.*"

Christ the human didn't come from heaven, but God's calling by His Holy Spirit makes a person an apostle, one sent from heaven by God's Holy Spirit calling them to be a prophet sent from heaven by God

like Moses and Christ, “*The Lord thy God will raise up unto thee a prophet from the midst of thee [human], of thy brethren, like unto me; unto him ye shall hearken” (Deuteronomy 18:15). How do we tell the truth?*

Deuteronomy 18:22 God tells Moses a true prophet from a false prophet is by what they say and actually takes place. Christ, by His faith, always did God’s Will and what He said. All Christ’s human works occurred because He lived by every word of God (Matthew 4:4).

Christ was an apostle of God sent from heaven by God’s Holy Spirit. He was filled with every measure (John 3:34).

THE THREE SYNOPTICS

All three synoptic gospels covered the same events but differ widely who they were writing to and how to apply God’s Truth.

God, as you know, is reproducing Himself to make man, the world, into God’s Image (Genesis 1:26). To do so, each person must be dealt with as an individual if free choice is given.

Liberty, as you know, God has completely and therefore so must we. Gnostics of any culture, Jewish, Ethiopian, Egyptian, Indian, Chinese, or the Aztec tell their own story as they understand in their time period. To your contemporary time, no two can agree in the whole world. Presently, your whole world is in

chaos because no government can agree.

The truth of God is absolute and always factual. If not, then can you be certain who is The Messiah? When what is said actually takes place, you can be certain it is God's Truth.

All the works Christ did actually had witnesses to prove Him true as the gospels, the synoptic from their truth as divers one from the other validate Christ is the first begotten Son of God who lived by every word of God as revealed by God's voice, God's Holy Spirit.

You are ready to study the Gospel of John, a very surprising and amazing gospel which places the events of Christ's life, death and resurrection from a totally opposite point of view.

CHAPTER 15

THE GOSPEL OF JOHN

John's Gospel is not chronological. That is why it is not part of the synoptic gospels. This gospel is not only inspired by God, it is a Spiritual gospel of good news.

As Christ said, Spirit is Spirit and flesh is flesh. A spirit is not a human being but can energize a mind to be inspired and have a spiritual mind. You have found scholars call it a theophany which is God in you. John was the human who wrote the book, but God was the actual author.

JOHN'S VISION

In Matthew 16, when The Apostle Peter claimed Christ was the Son of God, Our Savior said Peter didn't know it, but God directly told him. In Matthew 17, you read not only Peter, but James and John were also given the same vision and found themselves on God's mountain and throne with Christ sharing His Father's throne. On each side of Jesus was Elijah and Moses.

John as well as Peter had a sixth sense beyond the five senses of our human ability. The gospel of John was more than a prophet but one who saw God and Christ in heaven. John's Gospel of good news was written

by God's special inspiration. This gospel was God's Word written by John.

GOD IS THE WORD

Because of pre-conceived ideas, you can read right over a truth just as it is written. Like the synoptic gospels the first sentence describes the subject.

The Old Testament is very much the same. Genesis is defined by the first three words, "*In the beginning*" (Genesis 1:1). That is exactly what Genesis means.

Factually, Genesis in Latin conveys the first gene. A gene is a beginning the same as John 1:1 defines. A gene is the beginning of anything, a person with their genes or an entire universe. The word can be singular or plural.

Human science calls it a Singularity, what started all you are referring to. The universe began as many cosmologists claim is a Singularity, the beginning of everything. Out of one a universe came forth and is still growing according to man's science. God is that singularity or Genesis.

When The Apostle Paul proved the resurrection of Christ as well as humanity's, the apostle wrote what God's purpose was and what *The Bible* is all about. After Christ destroys all of God's enemies, death being the last, The Messiah turns over the kingdom back to God. Why?

“For he [God] hath put all things under his [Messiah’s] feet. But when he [God] saith all things are put under him [Christ], it is manifest [made known] that he is excepted [Our Savior], which he did [God] put all things under him [Christ]” (I Corinthians 15:27).

God prepared Christ’s body to be accepted as an acceptable sacrifice, *“Wherefore when he cometh into the world, he saith, [who] Sacrifice and offering thou wouldest not, but a body [Christ] hast thou [God] prepared me [for Himself]:” (Hebrews 10:5). Wow!*

It is God Himself who prepares Jesus to be the acceptable body to be our sacrifice. Christ didn’t do the work God did, as he said in John 5:19. It is not Jesus who did the work but God, Our Father Himself. Our Savior even received his life from the Father, which he now gives us.

The gospel of John isn’t Christ who does the work to prepare his human body for a sacrifice. It is God who always does the work and not those in the flesh like Jesus.

Paul gives us the answer, *“And When all things shall be subdued unto him [conquered], then shall the son also himself be subject under him, that God may be all in all” (I Corinthians 15:28). Did we grasp what Paul wrote? God does all the work and no human in the flesh even Christ. God is the Singularity, the Genesis of all that is created.*

Only God can reproduce Himself because only God

makes all things (Hebrews 3;4). Our Bible study is getting to the essence of the entire story of *The Bible*. It is God who does the work and is the Good News gospel who is everything that was, is and can be! God is the Kingdom of God as you will be in his exact Image like Christ. You must also become sons of God in The New Heaven and The New Earth (Revelation 21:7). That is the entire *Bible Story* from Genesis to Revelation.

Everything you study in *The Bible*, every word, God is reproducing Himself. When you study God's Word, you must be aware every word you read is God's, not Christ's or anyone else's. It is God's Will or Trust fund to you as an Inheritance.

Now you know The Gospel of John is spiritual because it is God Himself which is the Word of God and it is exactly what John 1:1 tells us, "In the beginning [Genesis] was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God." There it is. Not only was the Word with God, but simply put, is God. Let's not interpret telling *scripture* what it means when every Word of God already told you.

The Word which was with God is God Himself which Paul wrote why it is God who is All in All. *The Bible* always proves itself, or you have not as yet found God's Truth. You must cease using your logical Imagination, which is Babylon.

Every word written by John, God's Apostle [one sent] is God Himself doing the Work and not Jesus, the hu-

man. As you have learned over and over, God's voice is God's Holy Spirit. No man has heard God's Voice or seen Him. God's Holy Spirit is God's voice doing all the Works as He did in Christ.

GOD'S TEMPLE

Right after John 1, the second chapter discusses how Christ becomes angry in God's Temple, the Father's House. In fact, John 1 ends with God's Holy Spirit coming down from heaven as a peaceful dove when Jesus was baptized.

John 1:30 the baptist said Jesus was only a man. This human man had a miracle from birth God's Holy Spirit which made him holy (Luke 1:35). Reading on in John 1:33 you see that it is Jesus who baptizes you and gives you God's Holy Spirit. It is the Spirit which is God's Word (John 17:17).

Then Christ tells you what Paul said in I Corinthians 15:28, that God is all in all, "*That they all may be one; that thou, Father, art in me, and I in thee, that the world may believe [faith] [All to be saved] that thou [God] hast sent me." Wow!*

John 2:16 Christ makes a statement not in harmony with the synoptic gospels. John is a spiritual gospel and continues with the work God's Holy Spirit does, "*And said unto them that sold doves, Take these things hence [selling]; make not my Father's house an house of merchandise [Business].*" The rest of the story in John is how God changes from a corrupt physical

temple to a spiritual temple including the church of God (I Corinthians 3:16) because God's Holy Spirit is in them just like Christ.

GENESIS TO THE END

John's spiritual gospel begins with a physical temple corrupted without God's Glory to the future of God's spiritual temple full of God's Glory and goodness to come. The genesis of God's Holy Spirit which creates all of God's goodness continues to reproduce God as God's voice. God's voice is God's Holy Spirit speaking the Word of God in all those Called of God, the Chosen Ones.

Jesus as the exact word of God was Baptized to complete all righteousness, God's Glory. Now the Good News Story continues with the same spirit that was in Elijah as God's prophet, which is God's Holy Spirit (I Peter 1:21).

God's chosen ones, the church of God, in the same Holy Spirit are to witness Christ, the Word of God, to the world (Acts 1:8).

CHAPTER 16

THE BOOK OF ACTS

The Book of Acts is written by Luke the physician. He continues the account of the history of God's church who are the witnesses of Christ to the world, "*For John truly baptized with water [repentance], but ye [church of God] shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit not many days hence*" (Acts 1:5). The Book of Acts is God, by His Holy Spirit, continuing the story in the church of God.

JOHN'S BOOKS AND CHRIST

Some say hardly any books were written about Christ and His life. Did He exist at all? You are about to discover there are more books written about Christ and hasn't stopped even in your day. You need to prove every book by minute study of God's Word in complete detail. Paul wrote to Timothy the Evangelist to prove all things which includes this book to be certain they are of God's Word (I Thessalonians 5:21).

The Apostle John warns there were more books written about Christ, what He did and said, that there is no end. Josephus in his history mentions Jesus but there were more books written in Christ's time as archeology keeps finding. They were called gnostic books written by the spiritually elite of the Messiah's

time, *“And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen”* (John 21:25).

Jesus, after His resurrection, was seen by Christians and others for forty days (Acts 1-2). From His resurrection to the day Christ sent God's Holy Spirit was fifty days.

Many non-Christians as well as messianic Jews [some Pharisees], and Christians wrote many personal books about Christ and his life after his resurrection. Some claimed to be Hebrews like Paul. Read II Corinthians 11 in detail, as well as II Corinthians 12, where Paul had visions of God's throne as well as the truth.

Acts 1:8 Luke wrote only those with God's Holy Spirit can be God's Witnesses of Christ to the world. Now we can fully know why Luke had to write the gospel of Luke as well as the book of Acts.

Luke's gospel as taught by the chiefest apostles [the twelve] and Paul was a true witness of Christ's life on earth. His Gospel detailed his physical birth to our Savior's resurrection.

His forty days on earth witnessed by hundreds also wrote about Him after his resurrection. Some believed He never died, called gnostics, and claimed to know what The Apostles and Paul said. Gnostic books, whether from The Jews, Egyptians, Ethiopians, Indians, and others, wrote divers books with differing sto-

ries. This is what Luke, an eye witness, having God's Holy Spirit made it necessary for him to write his gospel as well as the book of Acts.

ACTS AND THE TRUE CHURCH

The Book of Acts was not written to cover the entire lives of The Apostles. That is why Luke only wrote Acts 1 to Acts 28 when Paul was released from prison in Rome, and ended abruptly with his first Roman imprisonment. For the rest of the story, read the book, *What God has Joined Together*.

When you study Acts, the fifth division of *The Bible*, read it to prove who are real disciples [students] of Christ with God's Holy Spirit. The gnostics, the Greeks, or those making a business out of God's word are false in their writings as well as their lives.

This is the reason Luke wrote the book of Acts, as an eye witness of the real churches of God who had to have God's Holy Spirit.

Luke begins Acts with the church's commission to witness Christ having the same spirit as Elijah and John the Baptist, God's Holy Spirit.

Everyone else in the book is a false prophet as the agnostics or Simon Magus and even the Athenians Paul taught at Mars Hill. When Paul wanted to preach Christ, they said they never heard of Him but they did know the Unknown God. (Acts 17:23). Read the full chapter.

TRAIL OF TRUE CHRISTIANS

On Pentecost, Peter preached the coming of God's Holy Spirit to God's people. He also covered the Coronation of Christ in heaven when he left the earth. God crowned him as the priest/king. Melchizedek was a king ruler and merciful priest who forgave sins of those who repented (Acts 2:38). All of them were to receive God's Holy Spirit. They were all of Israel from the Mediterranean basin.

The first Gentile was a Centurion Roman soldier. Luke wrote this account to reveal the change of Christ's bride to The Gentiles as a whole. Most Jews rejected him, and only the remnant of Israel accepted him as Messianic Jews.

*The Old Covenant law of Moses didn't bring them to Christ, but since they repented and were baptized, God gave them his Holy Spirit without keeping *The Law*. Now *The Law* and prophecy was revealed by God's Holy Spirit, *The New Covenant*.*

Now anyone who repents and is sincerely baptized will receive God's Holy Spirit to give you truth and prophecy. You do not need any of the works of *The Law* because God's Holy Spirit writes *The Law* in your heart [desires] and mind [conscience].

Now true Christians deeply have God's Law internalized as well as seek All of God's righteousness. I John 5:17, John wrote, "*All unrighteousness is sin.*" *The Law of Moses* can only lead you to Christ, but

in Christ, love fulfills *The Law* (Romans 13:10). Peter now tells those with God's Holy Spirit to fear God [Seek Him] and seek God's righteousness (Acts 10:35).

The Pharisees who were Messianic Jews insisted upon circumcision and keeping of *The Laws* as mandatory for all Christians, even Gentiles (Acts 15:5). The Temple was still there and one could not enter without circumcision.

The Apostles conclude since Paul wrote in I Corinthians 3:16 that Christ's Temple is spiritual because true worshippers do so in Spirit dwell in a Spiritual Temple by God's Holy Spirit.

All those Messianic Jews and Christians worship God as individuals and are the body of Christ. Luke as a true witness wrote Acts to define who were God's People to become sons of God like Christ.

The rest of Acts covers how God's People could be corrupt by false apostles, followers of Satan (II Corinthians 11:3). (Read the book, *Simplicity In Christ*).

The rest of Acts teaches the people of God who to avoid, which even includes those fellowshipping in God's church, "*For I know this, that after my departing shall grievous wolves enter in among you, not sparing the flock [Sheep], Also, of your own selves [elders] shall men arise, speaking perverse things [twisted] to draw away disciples [students] after them" (Acts 20:29-30).*

Acts begins with God's Holy Spirit adding to the church

daily but the rest of Acts just like Israel the church is corrupted and is divided. The body of Christ is carnal and divides into many groups, differing in their faith.

Jesus is His last prophecy to His disciples gave as His first warning what Luke wrote. Jesus asked when the Temple would be ?----?. Jesus answered, “Take heed that no man deceive you. For many shall come in my name, saying, *I am Christ* [Christians]; and shall deceive many” (Matthew 24:4-5).

God, Christ, apostles and those with God’s Holy Spirit warned believers Satan will deceive you just as Eve was and was followed by Adam. Death is the result.

Five divisions of God’s word witness how God reproduces Himself. Liberty is mandatory to be in God’s Image. The sixth division becomes chaotic and many fell away. Those with God’s Holy Spirit, become weak and having doubts being human.

The sixth and seventh parts prophecy of their futures and outcomes which is Eternity in Paradise.

CHAPTER 17

TIME OF SORROWS

Christ forecasted his return within the time period of His generation. Matthew 24:26 declares all these things will transpire during The Time of Sorrows (Matthew 24:8). What happened?

SIXTH PARTITION

The number six is a man's number as five is grace, four is earthly, three is completeness, two is a witness and one is God and His creation.

The sixth Biblical division are the Epistles, mostly of the twelve original apostles' writings. Being the sixth, it is about humans and how they react. There are fourteen Epistles written to the churches and the ministry, the pastoral letters. The book of Matthew begins with the generations of the Christ, two times seven, or fourteen. The Epistles cover three times, or completion. These Epistles start with humanity which finally leads to Christ, the book of Revelation how God's two witnesses guided by Christ, the Revelator through God's seven angels.

ROMANS

Paul hasn't visited Rome, so he warns them about the

original creation and how mankind knew the one true God and how they ended up corrupt, worshipping the creation instead of the creator. They held the truth in an unrighteous way (Romans 1:18).

God was furious because they stopped God from reproducing Himself. By giving free choice, they corrupted themselves and had reprobate minds [rebellious].

Paul did so knowing what the Romans believed, copying the teaching of the Greeks, believing they were to be the wise and not pagans, the unwise country people who were uneducated.

They worshipped the same gods, but used Roman names instead of Greek. From Romans 2, he begins with *The Law of Moses* to baptism and the resurrection.

The rest covers God's gifts to His people and the body of Christ. He ends from Romans 14, warning what isn't by faith and ending by giving salvation to the known surviving Christians to keep the faith in Christ and glory to the only truly wise God and His Son. Amen [So it is written].

CORINTHIANS

Written by Paul about 50 - 55 C.E., Corinth a wild city of Greece was on an isthmus about four miles wide and was extremely wealthy with its international shipping trade. Corinth was a commercial and pluralistic religious city with the Temple to Aphrodite the goddess of beauty and love.

Even their priestesses were about one thousand strong, serving as sex slaves. The city was definitely sin city with a favorite stopover for merchants in the shipping trade. Carnality, serving the flesh and idolatry were abundantly prevalent. Corinth was a fun city.

Paul had a problem evangelizing as well as keeping Christians in the truth. Both epistles continue the journey of spelling out the truth.

The Churches of God in Corinth were prone to choose congregations by the preachers of their choice, much like today. They certainly weren't a united body of Christ, "*And I, brethren, could not speak unto you as unto spiritual, but unto carnal [fleshly], even as unto babes [new carnal Christians] in Christ*" (I Corinthians 3:1).

A plethora of doctrines was being preached by the ministers of Christ, teaching different approaches to the truth. Even Paul warns don't ??-----??. Paul writes each preacher fulfills a different way to God. Then he tells them to be faithful Christ must be the foundation (I Corinthians 3:10-11).

Read all of I Corinthians in detail because Paul declares any man preaching and speaking falsely God will put them through a fiery trial and purged of their error and finally be saved (I Corinthians 3:11-16).

Corinth as God's church had many doctrines, some true, some not. Corinthians covers Paul's teachings to follow Christ by God's Holy Spirit. Study each

part as a stairway to spiritual growth.

GALATIANS TO COLOSSIANS

To the Jews first and then The Gentiles as Paul writes to The Galatians. Just like Paul and other Jews attended the local synagogues on the seventh day Sabbath, Gentiles also attended their local Synagogues. They listened to The Elders of their congregations just as James predicted.

We know Gentiles did not need to be circumcised or keep the letter of *The Law*, “*For Moses of old time hath in every city them that preach him, being read in the synagogues every Sabbath day*” (Acts 15:21).

Moses isn't just *The Law* but the entire five books of *The Bible* which wrote about Christ as well as *The Law* (Deuteronomy 18).

Galatia includes two different geographic areas north and the middle southward having slightly different histories. From Rome's empire Galatia, the Gauls were a good part of Europe called Galatia.

Earlier, the Gauls occupied Asia Minor, present-day Turkey. They reigned from northern Gaul and in the day of the last king, he willed Gaul to the Roman empire and only were in Europe.

In Paul's time, it referred to central to southern present-day Turkey. Gaul is Biblically vital for the truth but also covered many of Paul's preaching trips. He

established many churches and attended the Synagogues himself.

With *Torah* taught they also heard about *The Old Covenant Law of Moses*. Gentile Christians heard they should be circumcised and keep *The Law of Moses*.

Galatia, a Christian stronghold in many cities, became confused. Do the Gentiles need to be circumcised and keep *The Law of Moses*, or not?

Paul wrote Galatians to clarify neither circumcision or *The Law* was needed for The Gentiles, those who had God's Holy Spirit. Read Galatians to garner Paul's teaching.

Galatians, as Corinthians and Romans, were easily led astray from the faith of Christ which is Christ in you by God's Holy Spirit.

EPHESIANS

Ephesians is a special Epistle by Paul and understanding Christ in you, the mystery of God the hope of Glory (Colossians 1:27). Paul spent many years in Ephesus and even fought lions in their colosseum.

Ephesians worshipped Diana as a goddess and made a lot of money by selling her idol. The Temple of Artemis was located there, regarded by the Roman empire as a place of safety and people were left at peace if they lived in her environs. Revelation lists Ephesus as first on the mail route of the seven churches in revela-

tion 2 and 3. Ephesus becomes exceedingly important for all seven churches and their doctrinal beliefs.

Remember Paul warned Elders from Ephesus would become false prophets and corrupt the truth of Christ. The Epistle to Ephesus was of great import to all the churches in Southern and northern Gaul as you will research scripturally. In fact, the Epistles of Galatians to Colossians constantly have Paul preaching to watch out for false doctrines which will corrupt God's churches.

Ephesians, because of all the confused doctrines, Paul writes the very basic teachings before the book of Genesis. Paul proclaims God's will and pleasure which he predestinated, "*Paul, an apostle [one sent] of Jesus Christ by the will of God, to the Saints [holy ones] which are at Ephesus, and to the faithful in Christ Jesus*" (Ephesians 1:1).

Immediately, Paul writes there are two types of growing Christians, the Saints and the faithful. Then Paul defines what and who these two groups are and why, *Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who hath blessed us with all Spiritual Blessings in heavenly places in Christ: According as he hath chosen [by our hearts] us in him before the foundation [creation] of the world, that we should be holy [Saints] and without blame [mercy] before him in love. Having predestined us unto the adoption of children by Jesus Christ to himself [faith], according to the good pleasure of his will*" (Ephesians 1:3-5). This is the complete Gospel called *The Everlasting Covenant* in Isaiah 55, as well

as throughout *the scriptures*.

Two groups the Saints who are holy ones like God as His sons by adoption. The faithful are also spiritually growing in Christ as well. The first group, the Saints, are the Bride of Christ in the first resurrection.

The faithful are in the process of growing and will be the sheep in the second resurrection as sheep, the faithful (John 5).

God predestined to have these two groups in His Kingdom. God planned and determined to make a family by adoption from physical parents to become Spiritual sons of God.

Ephesians clearly separates the sons of God from all false doctrines. Ephesians simply states both groups were given the full ministry of Christ to grow or mature to the stature of Christ (Ephesians 4:13-14).

Notice, Paul writes as long as we remain in the first love, we will no longer be tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine. That's it. Corruption continues in Ephesus as Paul foretold them.

THE REST OF THE EPISTLES

From Philippians, Paul assaults the gnostic and government doctrines for religion as guided by Rome. They are the wise of the world, the elites.

Philippians insists all are to become equal with God,

having God's mind or way of thinking. Christ was your author or example (Philippians 2:5).

Paul straightens out the Colossians all wisdom and knowledge come from Christ and not the Holy days which are only a shadow or prophecy to come of better things which is Christ.

Even philosophy of men and ritualistic worship of angels are to be avoided. All the holidays and angels which are a form of human will worship but not Spiritual growth in Christ.

Christians are not to judge others on the way to the truth but to be faithful to "Christ – "In You" the hope of God's Glory which is God's Goodness.

Thessalonians has a new set of problems, the end time and the return of The Messiah. Paul directs until the final anti-Christ is obviously made known, your Savior will not return. The resurrection becomes a problem.

Timothy to Jude warns the ministry to teach "Christ – "In You" and even has to clear up the difference between the Levitical and Melchizedek which is Christ.

Jude the last of the apostle's teaching issues a warning between those destroyed in The Lake of fire because God's churches have lost God's first love and need to return to the faith of the Saints (Jude 3), "*But ye Beloved, building up yourselves [Spiritually growing] on your most holy faith, praying in the Holy Ghost, Keep*

yourselves in the love of God [Romans 13:10], looking for the mercy of our Lord Jesus Christ unto eternal life [Everlasting Covenant]. And of some have compassion, making a difference: And others [Christians] save with fear [Acts 10:35] pulling them out of the fire, hating even the garment [clothes] spotted [false doctrines] by the flesh [being human]” (Jude 23-23).

The churches of God, even in Galatia, Turkey, are in chaos doctrinally, each thinking they are right.

CHAPTER 18

BIBLE'S SEVENTH BOOK

Revelation almost didn't become Canon, the rule as part of *The Bible*. Satan was full of wrath, trying earnestly to devour God's people as a lion (I Peter 5:8).

PHILEMON

Surprising, Paul's epistle, Philemon, is after Timothy the Evangelist. Why did that happen? Shouldn't Philemon follow Thessalonians?

Philemon is a rich man in God's church who is a loving servant to Christ. He owned a servant named Onesimus who escaped Philemon's rule. Just like God allowed Joseph to be a slave and a prisoner. He was released to be the second in command after Pharaoh.

Onesimus became a servant and helper to Paul in his ministry. Paul knew Philemon owned his servant and Paul agreed to pay for Onesimus to serve Christ Our Lord and Master (Matthew 23:10-11). To be a chief, one must be the greatest slave or servant.

CHRIST'S PROPHECY

We have studied the Witness of Jesus [his life] which is the Spirit of Prophecy (Revelation 19:10). How could

that be? Christ's life was an example of how God is reproducing Himself. Christ fulfilled all righteousness when He was baptized by John the Baptist.

Christ's life fulfilled all the steps to perfection. As you read, Hebrews 6 lists every doctrine Christ personally followed from repentance to baptism, including each step right to perfection. That is why Jesus was a witness [example] by the earthly life He lived as a prophecy for Christians to follow.

Christ became a Servant Slave just like Joseph to Onesimus and all were redeemed. This is a prophecy right out of Isaiah 42:1, "*Behold my servant [God's], whom I uphold, mine elect [chosen], in whom my soul [God's life] delighteth, I [God] have put my Spirit [Holy Spirit] upon him: he shall bring forth judgment [justice] to the Gentiles" (Isaiah 42:1). Read all of Isaiah 42. It is God's full Gospel in reproducing Himself. This is the New Covenant lived by his life as prophecy.*

Christ by faith and total trust in God's will, by living every word God told him, became the author of the book of life, the marriage register for the Wedding feast (Revelation 19:9). Everyone is called to the Wedding feast, both good and bad who will be blessed, but how (Matthew 22:10)?

The angel continues speaking to John to tell him how everyone will be blessed who are invited to the wedding feast whether good or bad. The angel announces to John that all will be blessed who are invited if they follow the witness of Christ's life as a prophecy the

seven doctrines of Christ.

Now you know why Christ had to intervene and add The Book of Revelation to God's Word. Scholars are right, The Book of Revelation wasn't necessary as the Canon of rule if the Messiah could have returned in His generation as Christ said in Matthew 24. What happened?

Christ Himself wrote The Book of Revelation to tell a change in prophecy had to take place. Christ was to return so those who pierced Him would be at His return, "*Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him, and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen*" (Revelation 1:7).

Jesus was only to come once, as *Old Testament* prophecies foretold. With God's wrath unleashed with seven last plagues, all the world will cry and ask the stones to fall on them in the caves (Revelation 6:16-17). The world is in treaded fear and pain.

A CHANGE OF PLANS

You know Christ was to return with the seventh Trump and reveal the mystery of God to the world (Revelation 10:7). Everything written and testified by *The Old Testament* prophets were now to be clarified and made known.

We know in our *Bible study for Beginners* that one cannot comprehend *The Old Testament* without *The New*

Testament, and The New Testament without knowing The Old Testament.

That is the whole story of how God reproduces Himself from Alpha to Omega. It is God who does all the work even in Christ by God's Holy Spirit as Isaiah 42:1 foretells.

Revelation was revealed personally by Christ by the seven eyes of God, who are the seven angels over the seven churches in Revelation 2 and 3.

As Jude wrote the original faith of the saints from the beginning was lost. The seven churches in Revelation were all in confusion. Only a remnant [small piece] like The Messianic Jews and now The Gentile Christians are mixed in Babylon.

Now you know why the book of Revelation had to be written, the Bride wasn't worthy to be Christ's wife. The Groom had to change prophecy to allow the Bride to become Christ's wife. At the close of the book of Revelation, the Bride becomes ready to be the wife by being clothed with the Righteousness of Saints in fine linen.

The bride, as Jude prophesied, finally becomes like the Saints with God's Righteousness clothed in linen, God's Glory.

Revelation 19:10 follows informing Messianic Jews and Gentile Christians to come out of Babylon. Christ forestalls prophecy because the seven churches are not

ready nor the Messianic Jews for the groom to return for his wife. God, Our Father, would not allow His son to marry a virgin who doesn't love him enough to die for Him as well. *The Bible* calls it Christ in you which Ephesians 5:30 defines, "*This is a great mystery: but I speak concerning Christ and the church*" (Ephesians 5:32).

God's bride as well as His Son's bride are both not ready to be wives, so some will have to go through the final Tribulation [last labor pain]. These are the 144,000 of the tribes of Israel and the multitude of Gentiles from all nations in the world.

Christ stops his initial return in His generation for The Time of The Gentiles to be completed as well as the bride to become worthy to be the groom's wife.

Revelation 3:19-22 The Groom simply tells the seven churches He loves must be chastised and suffer pain, like Job, to make herself ready by coming out of Babylon.

We know prophecies according to Paul will fail. Fail in Greek defines as to pause, alter, delay until all the conditions are fulfilled (I Corinthians 13:8).

A LITTLE BOOK

When does your Savior stop his coming and foretell the future? You studied in Revelation 10:1-4 a super bright angel tells John to seal and stop writing about the seven last thunders.

Christ tells John by this angel to stop prophecy concerning His return to write a little or smaller book that is both sweet and bitter. Sweet to the taste as you eat it, but when it comes to the stomach and digest it, we find it is upsetting and bitter.

A new time period is to occur for Christ, the groom to come but a time of bitterness or tribulation must transpire when he returns.

It is why John is told to preach again to the world and its rulers. Revelation 11:1 begins with the measurement of Herod's temple. The court of Israel has a precise measurement to fit the 144,000 of the remnant of Israel but the court of The Gentiles is to remain unmeasured so the multitude of The Gentiles can be fulfilled.

From Revelation 11-22 is a rewritten prophecy so the Bride Spiritually grows to be like Christ as well as the times of The Gentiles is fulfilled before The New Heaven and New Earth.

The New Heaven and New Earth is made completely new. The Father's bride which is New Jerusalem and Christ's bride, the church and the Messianic Jews.

Without Revelation, God and Christ would have been defeated by Satan. Satan ends up into two lakes of fire, a lake of fire, and when God burns up the old earth and the old heaven (Revelation 19:20 and Revelation 20:14-15). The little book is the rest of this new prophecy when Christ returns as the groom for his

wife. This book also includes the new marriage registry where God the father marries His wife as well as Christ. The Marriage Feast is Eternal and never ends. It is the original *Everlasting Covenant* where God unites heaven and earth. What God has joined together let not man put asunder. This is original marriage God's way, united spiritually by God in the new heaven and the new earth.

The Old Covenant Law of Moses was for transgressors, criminals who needed to keep *The Law* perfectly or be cursed with Judgements. *Laws* are always for the unrighteous who are criminals. No rehabilitations or mercy (Exodus 23).

The Alpha becomes the Omega. Christ came to restore what was lost, perfection from The Tree of Life, God's Holy Spirit (Matthew 18:11).

The Old Covenant Law of Moses allows human divorce (Deuteronomy 24). The unrighteous would commit murder without God's Holy Spirit, so they had a wrong heart as Moses said (Matthew 19). God permits divorce for people whose hearts are not right. God permitted Moses' statute on marriage like those who follow Baal, the fertility god.

God's Holy Spirit in Elijah, John the Baptist, Christ and Christians as God's last witnesses prove only God can reproduce Himself because only He knows who He is. Only God, not even Christ can, only God can do the work. Christ is God's temple in the new earth and God who does the work to rebuild God's Holy

House.

Beginners from Genesis to Revelation *The Bible* completes God's Work by God's Holy Spirit. God with His new wife, New Jerusalem, the mother of us all converts all the repentant ones to be sons of God. The pilgrims continue their works of faith trusting and always Seeking God and His ways.

CHAPTER 19

HEAVEN ON EARTH

As *The Bible* study ends with a new beginning in Paradise, you are to discover *The Everlasting Covenant* with God never ends. The potential for Salvation is Eternal just like God.

THE MOTHER AND THE BRIDE

You have read God's doctrine in The Song of Moses which covers a part of *The Torah* was The Book of Deuteronomy. Before God chose Israel, Jacob as His lot to give as an inheritance God's doctrine to the world was much better with no pain.

The Everlasting Covenant was lost except those who seek God and His righteousness as Peter wrote (Acts 10:35). Now, when God makes all things new as *The Everlasting Covenant*, The Tree of Life intended to be.

The beginning is the end where God left Adam and Eve on their own human abilities. God only intervened when they cried out.

Jerusalem as the mother of all is married to God, the Father of all. God is destined to be all in all as a son of God. Christ's bride as his wife dwells in a mansion on God's estate.

Since only God gives life, his wife new Jerusalem nourishes all the newborn sons of God yearly. The guests who attend The Wedding Feast and bring their glory, all their goodness by drinking the running healing waters of God's Holy Spirit.

God the Father keeps speaking to his adopted children by His voice of God's Holy Spirit.

There is another group left in outer darkness, God's prison, in jail until they pay the last farthing for their debts. What debts?

Those in prison are in a dungeon like a cave until they work their way while in jail, paying back what they owe. After their purging of sin by the flesh being destroyed, they have a clean mind who need to be rehabilitated by working through all of Christ's seven doctrines.

After they do so, in drinking the healing waters from the leaves of The Tree of Life, they are welcomed as guests with the other guests annually bringing their glory.

The ban from New Jerusalem, grandma, everyone's mother, can now nourish her grandchildren forever.

Rehabilitation Christ is the root of The Tree of Life, offspring of David, merciful, and the bright and morning star, like an angel bringing God's truth to all who are thirsty and want to drink the healing waters of life (Revelation 22:1).

God and Christ are the temple, giving life to all who seek it, “*Blessed [happy] are they that do his commandments, that they may have right to the tree of life [guests], and may enter in through the gates [Israel] into the city*” (Revelation 22:14). Quite clear.

Those left out are in outer darkness until they choose to drink these healing waters. You now have the whole story with both God, the Father and Christ as the Temple giving life (Revelation 22:15).

Christ’s bride as His wife spreads the gospel of God’s Kingdom with the voice of God’s Holy Spirit, “*And the spirit and the bride [lambs] say, Come. And let him that heareth say, Come. And let him that is athirst [desires by free choice] come. And whosoever will [God’s] let him take the water of life freely [no Commerce]*” (Revelation 22:17).

Revelation 22:19 we need to seriously follow every word of this book of prophecy. Until one chooses to come out of Babylon, they will not be able to be registered in the book of life or enter new Jerusalem, everyone’s mother.

THE LORD’S PRAYER

You have read Christ’s instruction how you should pray to God, your Father. First, you must highly honor God’s name. Then you are to pray that God’s Kingdom should come on earth.

The initial Tower of Babel concentrated on entering

into the gateway to God's Kingdom located on the top of the hill as God's Holy House.

On the way is a path circulating round and round this hill to God's Temple to worship Him and now His first begotten son who is in the Holy place where God, Our Father dwells in the Holy of holies.

The way is the path you must take to enter and worship Christ and God. This path is straight and narrow and has no other way than *The Everlasting Covenant* with mercy and God's voice His Holy Spirit teaching those who choose to enter.

God is the Kingdom and now Christ shares His Father's Throne as well. Both are the Kingdom of God. God is the one performing the work as the chief servant and His Son the author and example to follow.

God will unite Heaven and Earth as it is God who will be all in all. God will reproduce Himself.

As Christ said when you pray heaven is to be united as one, so everything God created will be God, Our Father (John 17:20-23).

Next, you are to pray for our daily bread to follow with our debts [what we owe] to be forgiven as we forgive our debtors [those who owe us].

Then our prayers should give the honor to God who is reproducing Himself. You are to be spared from temptation, concluding with God's predestined will

and pleasure, “*For thine is the kingdom, and the power [Creator] and the glory [goodness] for ever. Amen [so be it, it is written]*” (Matthew 6:13).

It is God and Christ who are the Alpha and Omega combining *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament* as one. God is the One who is all in all. God is the entire creation, the Kingdom of God.

Your *Bible study* as a beginner must always ask when you study, how does what I am reading make God in His Image? That is the entire story of God’s written word. You start your study from the beginning and continue it in the end.

The potential for Salvation is Everlasting, ages upon ages, unending.

Revelation is not the end for God’s word but never changes continuing creation without end. As John the apostle said, “*I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written*” (John 21:25).

GOD IS ETERNAL

You know there are three types of time, divine time, astral time, and earthly time. In Hebrew, the word for day is “*yom*” from darkness to light, as the first day on earth.

The problem is earthly time by the four day had 24 hours in Jerusalem. We count earthly time by 24-

hour periods. In the North and South Poles, light and dark changes. Their days in the two poles are measured by the lowest and highest points for the sun and the moon.

Astral time is angelic as they are the ones appointed for their energies and speed of rotations around their suns.

Divine time is specifically for God who is eternal. The apostle Peter defines how God keeps time, “*But beloved, be not ignorant of this one thing, that one day is with God as a thousand years, a thousand years as one day*” (II Peter 3:8). Simple.

Yom, in Hebrew, can be an eternity like one day or thousands of years. When one is eternal, time as we know it [earthly] cease. Some believe *The Bible* claims the seven days of the creation are earthly days. If so, then it is seven twenty-four hour days.

God’s time is unlimited. He can be in two or more places at the same time. With God counting by earthly time could be thousands and thousands of years. God can be whatever He wants and chooses to be. He is much greater than earthly time.

His truth, time, ages, dispensations or books written is unending as is God’s word, God’s Holy Spirit. Bible study for beginners does not end in Revelation 22 but is unending. Praise God and His Son, the Christ.

CHRIST IN YOU

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 3

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *Christ In You*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man What's It All About?

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath God's Work Vs. Man's Work

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

The Silk Road

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Times Of The Gentiles

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

Basic Truth – Vol. XIV

Simplicity In Christ

Beginner's Bible Study

Christ In You

Competition

Visions, Dreams And Friends

Seeking God

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

TABLE OF CONTENTS

PREFACE	v
THE MYSTERY OF GOD	1
SPIRIT IN MAN	17
CHRIST'S WITNESS	29
A ROYAL PRIESTHOOD	41
A SEALED BOOK	53
WHO HAS THE MARK OF THE BEAST?	63
GOD'S TWO WITNESSES	73

PREFACE

Many preach you are to be a **witness** of Christ. Sounds **spiritual**, but what does it mean to have **Christ In You**? Some might literally believe Jesus, as a “being” must be “in you.” Others place a very mystical definition for **Christ In You**. With others, it is a feeling in one’s heart.

Amazingly, you will see, it has to do with much more than human reason. **Christ In You** has to do with God’s very “**inheritance**” for each and everyone of you. This “**inheritance**” has to do with God’s “**will**” or The New Covenant. As with any **will**, two or three witnesses are required. This “**will**” or “**covenant**” must be certified to be enforced so its benefactors may receive their reward. Read this exciting and wonderful blessing of all of God’s **riches**.

Two cd’s containing the first 15 books printed are available should you want to read them on your computer. Your comments and criticisms are welcomed. Biblical questions can be answered as time permits. **No monies can ever be accepted**. Also a DVD video which was a seminar Art had in Pasadena, CA. can be requested (free of charge). No monies can ever be accepted, but feel free to offer any comments or criticisms.

Art Mokarow

E-mail: art@mokarow.com

Box 1197

Web site: www.godspuzzlesolved.com

Montgomery, TX 77356

Download all books free of charge

God’s Puzzle Solved

Discovering God

God’s Sabbath And Holy Days

God’s Work

God’s Original Bible

Revelation Uncovered

Faith With Works

Children’s Books

Christ In You

God’s Story

God’s Two Trees

The Great Apostasy

Bible Study Made Easy

God’s Magical Ten Words

The White Throne Judgment

God’s Will

God’s Three Houses

CHAPTER 1

THE MYSTERY OF GOD

Very clearly, The Apostle Paul said The Hope of Glory or Salvation is only through *Christ In You* (Colossians 1:27). The Apostle revealed this glory which is *Christ In You* is a mystery. This mystery is now made manifested by His saints. The saints are The Righteous Ones who become Christ's Bride (Revelation 19:7-8). Why are the saints in The Church of God able to reveal Christ in them?

Paul clearly said you must have **The Mind of Christ**, which is having a concern for others first and not yourselves (Philippians 2:1-5). As Christians, you need to have a mind, which is concerned about God and His **creation**. Concern for **all things** instead of always thinking of "self." That is **The Mind of Christ** or **The Great Commandment** (Matthew 22:36-40). How do Christians manifest this **Mind of Christ** or *Christ In You*? Paul said the answer is **A Great Mystery**. What is this mystery?

Spirit In Man

Job states there is a **Spirit In Man** and when The Lord gives this **Spirit In Man** – mankind will receive **understanding** (Job 32:8). It makes you able **to think** logically. What is lacking, is that God must give **understanding** to **The Spirit In Man**. In Hebrew the word for "spirit" is "*ruach*" and in Greek it is "*pneuma*" or "a blowing wind." It is merely **an energy** in the form of wind or blow-

ing when you see leaves or sand blowing in all directions. This **life energy** makes your bodies work or function, physiologically. It is what gave **life** to Adam (Genesis 2:7). It is a **blowing wind** to start the physiological elements of a new babe. It is used as the **trigger** or **genesis of life**. It is what makes **human life begin**. That is why it states “**man became a living being**” or “**soul.**” A **soul** is not immortal. As in Job, **The Spirit In Man** gives “**life.**” Christ said **the soul** can be destroyed (Matthew 10:28).

There are different aspects in a man (all human beings). You have a human body “**soma**” and you have a soul “**psuche.**” This you have in common with animals and Jesus said all these elements of human life can be destroyed (Matthew 10:28). **None** of these elements are eternal. That is why God told Adam he was “**a living being**” or “**soul.**” “**Soul**” merely is a “**life**” or “**being.**” When there is **life**, it is the “*psuche*” which is in both animals and mankind.

Humans, in the physical creation alone, have “*pneuma*” or **the Spirit In Man**. It is **the life energy** which comes from God and goes back to God when a person dies. Your “*soma*” or “**body**” becomes **dust** at death and **The Spirit In Man** goes back to God who gave it (Ecclesiastes 12:7). This soul is defined as “a living thing.” When the soul dies, the living being no longer functions. Once life is gone, the soul also dies or ceases. Christ plainly said only **The Spirit** “*pneuma,*” “quickens” or “energizes” **life** (John 6:63).

Only God Has Life

Jesus, Himself answers the questions everyone has about **life** and **death**. Nicodemus, a Pharisee believed in Christ. He asked “How can a man be born **again**?” He wanted to know if a man must

enter his mother's womb a second time. Nicodemus didn't understand **The Spirit In Man**. Nicodemus only saw a human as a physical being, just as science does.

Jesus told Nicodemus **not to marvel, that he must be born again** (John 3:7). He compared "**the spirit**" ("*pneuma*") to the wind. The wind is merely another form of energy. In fact, the word "wind" in Greek is "*pneuma*." As science understands, **energy** cannot be destroyed; it **just changes form**. Without a **physical entity**, it is not visible or cannot be **felt** when it is not wind, but just **Spirit** or **life energy**.

Since **energy** cannot be destroyed, **it is eternal** and can only come from God. There is no source of **perpetual energy** unless it comes from God, The Father, who is **the first cause** and the only source of **life**. God is The Only One who **was, is** and always **will be** (Revelation 4:8). Jesus clearly said it is The Father who has **life** or **perpetual energy** in Himself (John 5:26). It is The Father, only, who can give **life**. Even Jesus, Himself, said it is The Father, God, who gave Him **life**.

Christ did not have **eternal life** until The Father gave it to Him, just as it is promised to you. **Life can only come from life** and cannot come from **nothing**. There must be a **first cause** who has **life**, who always had, and can create **life**! Since **life** can only come from **life** and true Christianity is having **Christ in You**, so how does this happen? What does *The Bible* mean when it states ***The Mystery Of God is Christ In You*** (Colossians 1:27)?

The Laodicean Dilemma

One of God's **seven Christian churches** has had, and has today, a big problem (Revelation 3:15-22). Jesus tells them they believe

they have all **the spiritual riches** they need (about Christ). This **church** preaches they have **The Truth of God** and **they do not need anymore truth**.

They are **rich** but have **The Truth** of God. They feel they have all **the truth**, so it must come from them. But, Christ tells them they are **spiritually naked** and need **eye salve** on their eyes so they can really **see the truth**. They cannot fathom what they are lacking **spiritually**. He reminds them they must go into The Lake of Fire to be refined as gold. Since this is very serious, what was their problem?

Riches In Christ

Amazingly, *The Bible* clearly has the answer. *The Bible* interprets itself. Notice God's **biblical answer**. *The Book of Colossians* clearly reveals the problem with The Laodiceans. Paul said he was an able minister to fulfill God's **will** (Colossians 1:25-28). He tells The Colossians that this **Word of God is God's Mystery** which has been hidden for ages, and only now is made known to **His saints**. Saints are those Christians who grow **spiritually** to become The Bride of Christ in **the new heaven** and the **new earth** (Revelation 19:7-9). Notice, only **the saints**, or **the righteous ones**, are qualified to be Christ's Bride. How does this happen? This mystery among The Gentiles is **the riches** of God's **glory** (Colossians 1:27). This was The Laodicean's problem. They believe they had and still have all **the riches** or **truth In Christ** but are blinded to **the real truth** of Christ, which is **Christ in all of you**. The Laodiceans are filled with **church doctrines**, but they do not understand what **Christ in you** really means.

These are **the true riches**. You will find The **Laodiceans** believed **spiritual growth** or **Salvation** required **human effort**.

Church And The Body

Did you know that The Church of God is not necessarily The **Bride of Christ**? The Greek word for “**church**” is “*ecclesia*” and is defined as a “**general public assembly**” or “**the called-out ones**” who are invited to The Wedding Feast of Christ and His Bride. “**Blessed are they which are called unto the marriage supper of the Lamb**” (Revelation 19:9).

The church consists of those called of God who are being invited to Christ’s Wedding Feast. God said to His servants, “**Go ye therefore into the highways, and as many as ye shall find, bid to the marriage**” (Matthew 22:9). This is truly a **general assembly**. He says to call not only **the good**, but even **the bad** to the feast (Verse 10). But notice, “**many are called but few are chosen**” (Matthew 22:14). Not everyone in The Church of God will be **chosen** to be The Guests, let alone The Bride. Why?

The Apostle Paul answers this question when he states Christ is The Head of His Church and is responsible to sanctify, cleanse and wash His wife by The Word of God (Ephesians 5:23-28). **The church, the called-out ones**, who are to attend The Wedding Feast, must become **The Body of Christ** or you must have **Christ in you** to become Holy as Jesus and His Father. That is the difference. You must become Christ’s **body**. To just sit in The Church of God and doing human works doesn’t get you **an invitation** to attend The Wedding let alone be The Bride. Paul states this is **A Great Mystery** between Christ and **the church**. What is that mystery? **The Mystery is Christ In You** (Colossians 1:27)!

Laodiceans Are Blind

Why couldn’t **The Laodiceans** see they were blind concerning

Christ living in their very body? The Church of Colosse was not far away from their neighboring towns of Laodicea and Hieropolis. They were located in present-day central Turkey by The Lycus River. Christian preachers spoke in each town. Paul said he contended he was in **great conflict** when he thought of both **The Colossian Church** and **The Laodicean Church** (Colossians 2:1-2). This was no small matter. That is why Christ condemned **The Church of Laodicea** so harshly in Revelation 3:14-22. Their church teaching or doctrines **totally missed The Truth of God**. They were saturated in human efforts and works. What did they miss? **The Laodiceans** and **Colossians** needed to be knit together in love (*agàpè*) and to the **riches of the full assurance of understanding The Mystery of God** and of **The Father and Christ** (Colossians 2:2). They did not know what had been hidden was **The Mystery of God**, which is **Christ in you**. That was their **blindness!** They thought they were rich in **truth** but **the real purpose** of God's word, **Christ In You**, they did not understand. They were blinded to this **mystery**.

Paul pleads for The Colossians and The Laodiceans, as well, to pray for him to have an open door to speak of this **Mystery of Christ** (Colossians 4:3). What is that **mystery**? The **mystery** is **Christ In You – The Hope of Glory** (Colossians 1:27). Paul said he bore record of **the great zeal** Epaphras, their minister, had for **The Colossians** and **The Laodiceans**. Both **churches** had the same **spiritual deficiency**. They both thought they had **the truth** as God's **churches** and were already **spiritually rich**. The **Laodicean Church**, especially, couldn't see or understand they were **spiritually** destitute! What did they lack? They did not understand the cardinal basis of all Christian **spiritual growth**, which is **Christ In You**. Paul told The Colossians, after they read their letter, to be sure to send it to Laodicea to be read there, also (Colossians 4:15-16). What did Paul mean when he told Laodi-

cea and Colosse that **Christ had to be “in them?”** Evidently The Colossians finally got the point, although those in Laodicea were still blind to this **truth**.

Laodicean Blindness

What doctrines or teachings were blinding The Laodiceans? **Biblically**, there were **two false teachings** in Laodicea. These two false teachings were blinding them so they could not see **the truth** to obtain **Salvation** or **The Glory of God** (I Corinthians 15:28-38). One misleading **doctrine was temporary** doing works which **only to be a shadow** or prophecy to come (until Christ returns). The second was trying to overcome the sins of the flesh through self – denial. Both require human works or human effort, neither of which could change human nature nor write God’s Laws in their hearts and minds. It cannot be emphasized enough that all human religious effort or works by humans never pleases God (Romans 8:8). Christ said, “the flesh or your human effort, as sincere as it might be, **profits nothing** (John 6:63)!” This is **will worship** contrived only by human minds – to do works by their human efforts. They were doing religious human works which they thought pleased God. It was their way of acting **righteous**. It was their own effort to attempt to keep The Letter of The Law and, of course, they couldn’t (Hebrews 8:8).

Paul’s Answer

Paul said **Only In Christ** can all **fullness dwell** (Colossian 1:19). Anything and everything that is required for **Salvation is In Christ**. At **the resurrection** is the only way, that you can receive The Glory of God. God’s **purpose** is to be **all and in all** (I Corinthians 15:28). Nothing else counts for a Christian even if it seems good or seems pleasing to God. God does not want hu-

man ideas of how He gives you **Salvation**. Only God can give **life** through His Son, Jesus. Only **In Christ** are **hid all the treasures** of **wisdom** and **knowledge** (Colossians 2:3). No other **religious system or teaching** counts or matters to God. Paul warns those in Colosse and Laodicea to beware of **any man** or **any one** spoiling them from this **truth** with their philosophy and traditions (religious systems) after **the rudiments** of the world rather than **Christ In You** (Colossians 2:8-10). “Rudiments” in Greek signifies “any religious system that basically follows **works** in a **row**.” It is a “**religious system of works**,” following a traditional ritual or system in neat rows continually time after time.

In Christ dwells all **The Godhead – bodily**. “*Theotes*” in Greek defines “Godhead of all in God’s mind and thoughts,” which brings **Salvation** only by **Christ In You**, which is The Mystery of God. This **mystery** is only given to His **saints** so they can understand. Paul plainly clarifies God’s **entire purpose** in this *Epistle* (Colossians 2:10). **Any man teaching a different philosophy** whether by **judging** or **beguiling** God’s people contrary to **Christ In You** is false (Colossians 2:16-18). “**For in him dwelleth all the fullness of the Godhead bodily**” (Colossians 2:9). “**Fullness**” in this case is “*pleroma*” or “**completely full**” or “**perfect In Christ only**.” This was the blindness of The Laodiceans and why they thought they had **all the truth they needed**. Christ warned, “If they do not understand **the truth**, they will have to go into The Lake of Fire and be refined as gold.” The Laodiceans and Colossians thought they had to do human works and follow a religious system, to be **saved**.

Two False Teachings

What kept The Colossians and especially The Laodiceans from learning **the truth** so they could receive **The Gift of Salvation**?

First, Paul said don't let **any man judge you** about **meat and drink, new moons, Holy Days, or The Sabbath Days**. Why? Because they were only **shadows** or a prophecy of things **to come**. Doing these traditions, which were rudimentary in The Jewish "**faith**," only pointed to Christ as a prophecy. Keeping the new moons, Holy Days, Sabbaths and its related works did not, nor could, produce **salvation**. (Only **Christ In You** where all of **The Godhead dwells**). The only **truth** Christians needed was to have **Christ in them**. That is why Paul said that "**The Body**," "**The Church**," is of **Christ** (Colossians 2). Keeping a rudimentary religious system doesn't offer you **Salvation**.

It does not mean it was wrong to keep those days. This *Epistle* was written in 60 A.D. when Paul was in prison and **the temple** having God's "**glory**" was still there. The Glory of God left **the temple** between 66 A.D. and 70 A.D. when Titus destroyed it. When **The presence of God** left, no one could keep **The Works** of The Sabbath and Holy Days. They still were a shadow or prophecy about The Messiah and what He would do to bring you to **Salvation**. Once Christ gave His **life**, and **the temple** was destroyed in 70 A.D. **God's presence or glory** was gone. No one could any longer keep **The Works** of The Sabbath, Holy Days and new moons. From that point on, God only wanted Christians to worship Him **spiritually**, having **Christ In You** (John 4:21-24). That is why all Jews, Christians, Apostles, as well as circumcised Gentiles, kept those days only as long as God's **glory** was there. Once God's **presence** was gone, the new moons, Sabbaths and Holy Days could never be kept.

Justus, as a circumcised Gentile, kept those days only as long as **the temple** stood (Colossians 4:11). **In the millennium**, all these days will once again be enforced for the whole world to observe so they too can come to Christ in everyone's individual or-

der. There was nothing wrong with God's "**days**," but they could never changed human nature and therefore, are **not required for Christians as a means to receive Salvation**. Christ already fulfilled those days for Christians. Only **Christ In You** can give you **Salvation**.

No Man Beguile You

So far, Paul states not to allow any man use religious philosophy, to fool a Christian and never have **any man judge** you about God's **days** because they are only to prophesy about Christ. Finally, never let **any man** beguile you about **will worship** (Colossians 2:23). "Will worship" is "doing something you do religiously by your own effort." This is the second religious philosophy which caused The Laodiceans to be so blinded.

The Gnostic philosophy also infiltrated The Laodicean Church. The term "*Gnostic*" merely means "**knowledge**." Gnostics with their "abundant knowledge" **had many spiritual levels of belief**. One was **the worshipping of angels**.

Others believed in **the denial of the flesh**, such as personal beatings or taking a vow of silence. They figured on any means if it could control the sins of the flesh.

They believed the human body was evil and everything associated with it was evil. Therefore, they even denied Christ was ever **human**. He was only **God in the flesh**. Christ was not really human according to The Gnostics.

These **two false human rudimentary philosophies of the world** were plaguing Laodicean's doctrine, and causing them to be blind and naked. They did not **see**, just as The Jews could not see that

only **Christ In You** brings you and everyone **the fabulous Gift of Salvation**.

All human religious efforts trying to please God by the Keeping of The Holy Days, Sabbaths, new moons, (which were only prophecies) could **not save** them.

Neither could the false Gnostic teachings which in actuality kept blinding Christians from **Salvation** and **true spiritual growth**. **The works and the false teachings could never save them**. Only **God's Mystery – Christ In You** – can give you **Salvation** (Colossians 1:27).

Who Is The Man?

Paul continually warns to **avoid** listening to **a man**. Colossians 2, Paul states **four times** not to follow **any man** who does not teach you that each Christian must have **Christ in them**. To receive The Glory of God or **Salvation** you must have **Christ In You**. Your religious human works or efforts are necessary. Who is Paul talking about when he mentions “**a man**” or “**any man**” or when he only refers to “man?” (“**Man**” in his human state is not directed by God's Holy Spirit, which is **Christ In You**). He is totally speaking from **the natural mind of man** – his own human imagination of what seems right to him.

Laodiceans Are Deaf

With the introduction to The Laodicean Church, John gives you Christ's statement, “**These things saith the amen, the faithful and true witness, the beginning of the creation of God**” (Revelation 3:14). Notice, Jesus is **the faithful witness**. Christ is the **true witness** of God or **Christ In You** Revelation 1:5. Your Sav-

ior finalizes His plea to Laodicea specifically by stating, “**If any man hear my voice, Christ In You**” Revelation 3:20.

Jesus warns **the spiritually growing** Philadelphians, “**Behold, I come quickly, hold that fast which you have, that no man take your crown**” (Revelation 3:11). There are even more warnings against listening, or allowing **any man** to take away **Christ In You** by beguiling you or judging or teaching a different philosophy from **Christ In You**. Now, for a mysterious statement by God’s angel.

No Man Worthy

God, The Father, is holding a book in His right hand and a **strong** angel said, “**Who is worthy to open the book**” (Revelation 5:2)? Even a powerful angel wasn’t worthy to open the book. This book has **seven seals**, which kept the book closed. This book is *The Book of Revelation* and gives the answer of **Salvation** with the revelation of how The Kingdom of God will come. Only Jesus is worthy to enforce this **testimony** or **will** (Revelation 19:10). **No man** is worthy to open the book (Revelation 5:3-10). An important disclosure!

Time and again, in *The Epistle of Colossians* and *Revelation*, the words “**no man**” or “**any man**” are reiterated. The angel states Jesus of Judah proved **worthy** to open up the book. Why? He gave **His blood, He died and He was resurrected**. Christ truly is **the first worthy witness of God with His death and resurrection**. This is a **Great Revelation!** Both Paul and Jesus warned you not to allow **any man** to take, beguile, judge or to attempt to take away someone’s Crown of **Salvation**. The only one worthy to offer **Salvation** is when you have **Christ In You!** So there is **a man** *The Bible* talks about who can and **will deceive you**. Who

is this **man**? Does *The Bible* tell you? Yes, *The Bible* will reveal this **man** to you.

Paul Answers A Question

The Corinthian Church is called a **carnal church** by Paul. He claims they are only **babes** in **spiritual knowledge**. They know **very little** about gaining **Salvation**. What is the reason? Paul states they pick and choose what preacher they believe has more of **the truth** or **right doctrinal teaching about God** (I Corinthians 3:1-23). Some wanted to follow Apollos, Paul or others. The Corinthian Church was divided into **several denominations**, just as Christians today follow their **personal preferred preachers**.

Paul informs them that each preacher must be tested, just as The Ephesian Church did, to see if the preacher came from **the original Jewish Apostles**. What was **the truth** that Paul said would let Christians know they are hearing **the truth** about **Salvation**? Surprisingly, no doctrines or creeds are considered; only **Christ** as **The Foundation of Salvation**. **Christ In You** was what some preachers did not understand. Any other teaching was **false**. What was Paul's resolution?

Paul states every **man's teaching** will be tested or tried in **The Lake of Fire**. **Every man's preaching** is either of gold (truth), silver, precious stones (good and evil), wood, hay or stubble (I Corinthians 3:11). Some **man preachers** are teaching **the truth** while others are teaching a false message, **whether they are sincere or not**.

How will falsehoods be destroyed? In **The Lake of Fire**, but **the man** will be **saved** when after **the man repents** (I Corinthians 3:13-15). So, all the false teachings will be destroyed. This

can't get any clearer. Paul reveals that Christians, themselves, are God's **temple** because God's Holy Spirit dwells there, **The Glory of God or Christ In You**. *The Scriptures* reveal **The Truth of God**. What has been discussed here only scratches the surface of **false teachings** in many of God's **churches**.

Only Christ In You

“**Any man**” is “**a preacher**.” None, except Jesus, was worthy to open **the truth** about The Kingdom of God. Why? Only Jesus could have **died for your sins** (Revelation 5:9). **Christ In You** comes by God's Holy Spirit. Only **God's Spirit** opens **The Spirit In Man** to **God's truth** (I John 2:20). There is your *Bible* answer.

“**Any man**” that is “**any preacher**,” not preaching this **biblical teaching** was not (and is not today) worthy and it made The Apostle John cry. He realized how many preachers misled, intentionally or not having deceived Christians who do want **The Truth of God!** “**Preachers should take heed**.” The answer to **Salvation** has **nothing to do** with **human religious systems of works**. Even if those works or deeds have to do with **God's “shadows”** of future prophecy such as the meal offerings, **new moons**, Sabbaths, or Holy Days. Any days: Easter, Halloween, Valentine's Day, and so on, don't count. They are meaningless. God wants you to become Holy as Holy as He is (Ephesians 1). “Human works” or “human religious effort” may seem pleasing to many but it doesn't please God (Romans 8:8 and John 6:63). Anything you do physically isn't how God wants you to **worship Him**. God, in *The New Covenant*, only demands you worship God **spiritually** and **in truth** (John 4:23-24). There it is. **Christian Salvation only is possible by having Christ In You – The Hope of Salvation or The Hope of The Glory of God.**

The Bible answer is clear. **The mystery is to preach God's truth for Salvation** which is **Christ In You**. The exciting last chapter of this book declares all those who **do not** understand this **mystery** of **Christ In You** and its full meaning have the dreaded **Mark of The Beast**. Read and study each scripture very thoroughly and carefully. With this study and all the scriptures constant prayer, you will understand **Christ In You!**

CHAPTER 2

SPIRIT IN MAN

You now know Salvation and Spiritual Growth is only predicated upon Christ In You (Colossians 1:27). This is The Mystery of God which He reveals to His saints (Ephesians 1).

How can Christ be “In You?” Obviously it does not mean Jesus, as an INDIVIDUAL BEING, is to be in each and everyone of you. Jesus said He would send you a COMFORTER, which is “The Spirit” or in Greek, the word is “*pneuma*,” which is “The Spirit of Truth” (John 15:26). Plainly, Jesus told you this Spirit testifies of Christ Himself, or Christ In You.

It is God’s Holy Spirit which Jesus gives you at baptism, which reveals **Christ In You** (Matthew 3:11). How does this happen? First, you must know what a “Spirit” or “*pneuma*” actually means. Is God’s Holy Spirit another “being?” If God’s Holy Spirit is another “being,” then it means you would be possessed by another “god” or “being.” There would have to be billions and trillions of other beings, which would be available for each and every Christian or many, many Holy Spirits to be in each and everyone. This could never be. Remember, Jesus is filled with God’s Holy Spirit (John 3:34). Then John, The Baptist said this Holy Spirit given to Christ without measure, gives Him, The Very Words of God. So, God’s Holy Spirit, not another “being” are The words or The “**thoughts**” of God. How does this “**comforter**” lead you to

God's **truth**? Those who are "In Christ," walk not after the flesh or doing human works, but after The Spirit (Romans 8:1). This "**Spirit**" is the very **Essence of God, The Father** (John 3:34). Now, you are getting some *Bible* understanding about **Christ In You**. The Holy Spirit is **not** another god-being, but The Very **Words of God** and **God's very essence**.

God's Spirit And Spirit In Man

The **Holy Spirit** of God and **The Spirit In Man** are **both of God**. Both are "**a *pneuma***" or "**spirit**." "**Spirit**" which is "*ruach*" in Hebrew or "*pneuma*" in Greek is "not a being." Christ told you "as the wind" (John 3). A "**Spirit**" is **not** an **individual being** but **eternal life energy** sent from God. When humans die, this **life energy** goes back to God who gave it to you at birth. A "**Spirit**" is not a separate being, but **energy** or **life essence** from God Almighty who only has **life** to give. God is the only source of this **life energy** and God takes it back when He chooses. When he takes it back, death follows, but **the life energy** or "*pneuma*" goes back to God (Ecclesiastes 12:7). Now, an important question! If **The Spirit "in man"** goes back to God and is only a life-giving energy from God, it cannot be a **separate being** but a direct part of God, Himself.

In likeness, it is the same as the sperm from a man impregnating a woman's egg which starts a human life. All of the male genes are in the new babe. That is exactly what happens to a human being when God places His "**Spirit**" in a human and that "babe" becomes a **living being**. When that living being dies, that essence of **life energy** given by God then returns to God and that human no longer possesses **life**. Now, the all-important question about God's Holy Spirit. If "**Spirit**" is not another being, but only **life energy** from God – what is **God's "Holy Spirit?"**

God's Holy Spirit

Since “**Spirit**” – “*pneuma*,” is only **life energy**, what is the difference between God’s **Holy Spirit** and Holy “*pneuma*” from **the “Spirit” “in man?”** “**Spirit**” is “**spirit**.” God’s Holy Spirit is a **Holy “life energy”** of God, Almighty. It is all that God is – literally God “in you.” It cannot be another “god being.” If it were, then each and every Christian, when they receive God’s Holy Spirit, would be possessed by another “being.” Obviously, that is not true. God does not possess people. With God, it is always a matter of free choice and not possession.

God’s Holy Spirit is **the life energy** of God Almighty, Himself. It is **the essence of God Himself**, which is **undefiled**, and totally **God’s goodness**, and **God’s very Words** (thoughts) and all **the riches** of God’s “**glory**.” It is God imparting **His essence**, which as little babes, **you in faith**, accept from Him to become Holy as He is Holy. This Holy Spirit of God does not possess you as another being but reveals **truth or reality**. **God’s Word “is truth”** (John 17:17). Once you repent of sin, you become receptive to God’s very **truth** about Himself and His creation. That is why Paul said **all have sinned** and come short of The **Glory** of God. God’s Holy Spirit reveals **the very mind of God**, **the very way He thinks!** God firmly believes in your having free choice. This is the essence of the whole story of *The Holy Bible*. Your **faith** or “**the way**” you see and understand life is the knowledge you accept as **truth**.

Adam And Eve

From the original Garden of Eden with Adam and Eve, God enforced no laws, no forced restrictions or requirements. Adam and Eve were totally free to do whatever they wished. God told them,

only about two choices they could make and He left it up to them to choose. He told them what the results would be if they chose to eat from one tree or the other. He didn't even tell them it would be a sin if they were to choose the wrong tree. It was totally up to them. They had absolute **free choice**. God merely warned them what would happen if they made the wrong choice. God does not force His "**way**" upon anyone. Humans must come to seek God and want His "**way**." It's called **repentance**. God does influence events, at times, for you to come to reality or **the truth**.

Once you seek God and His "**way**," He then gives you a "**comforter**" to understand **truth** so you can make sound-minded decisions. Paul clearly said, "**For God hath not given us the spirit [His Spirit] of fear; but of power and of love and of a sound mind**" (II Timothy 1:7). God's Holy Spirit is **not another "being"** but God, The Father's very **MIND!** His **mind** is a **mind of love and power**. That is what God bestows upon each and every Christian upon **repentance** – then, **baptism** and **the laying on of hands**. Christians now have access to God's very **mind**, which is His **love** and His **power**. How plain and clear. The very Words of God are then understood and accepted by each Christian. You, then, in your mind and heart want to live by every Word of God, as Christ said (Matthew 4:4).

God's Holy Spirit And Our Spirit

Now to understand the complete reality of **the Spirit "in man"** and the need for God's Holy Spirit. Paul said he finds a **law** or a controlling force within his human nature (Romans 7:21-25). When he wanted to do **good**, he instead found **evil** in his nature. The law of survival is most paramount in both humans and animals. Survival of the fittest prevails within your flesh. Sexual drives, hunger and self-protection take precedence while in your

human bodies, as with any animal. Paul, however, said after his inward man (mind and heart) he delighted in God's Law, but in his members, flesh and survival of the fittest would come first. "**O wretched man that I am! Who shall deliver me from the BODY of this death**" (Romans 7:24)? Paul thanked God through Jesus Christ, so with the **MIND**, he served The Law of God; but with the **flesh, The Law of Sin**.

Very clear, the answer is **your mind** and how you see and understand things. "**Christ In You**" and having **God's Holy Spirit**, which is developing a **sound mind**, is the answer. How does "**Christ In You**" happen in your Christian life?

God's Holy Spirit And Your Spirit

Paul answers the question he previously presented in Romans 7 (Romans 8:1). With your flesh, you obey The Law of Sin; but with **your mind**, The Law of God can win over the flesh. Paul states those who fight against their own fleshly desires and **walk** (in Greek defined as) "not to follow their flesh," but are to achieve their goal of **Christ "in them"** (Verse 1). God's **mystery – Christ In You**, is the solution to become perfect (Matthew 5:48). As long as you are human and have the desire to **survive**, you will sin. That is why Jesus said if you **lose your life** – human life, you will **live**. If you try to **save your life**, you will **die** (Matthew 10:39). **Christ In You** must have something to do with **giving up** the human desire in your heart and mind – the desire for **survival of the fittest**. That is why Jesus had to be your High Priest, Melchizedek, to intercede on your behalf for all the sins you keep committing.

If you have **Christ In You**, then you will have no condemnation or not be held **guilty** for sinning against The Law (Romans 8:1).

Since Christ removed the **curse** or **death penalty** for breaking The Law, you are dead to The Law or in other words, The Law no longer makes you guilty when you sin or break The Law (Galatians 3 and Romans 7). As long as you continue to **repent** sincerely, when you sin, you are free from The Law of Sin and Death (Romans 8:2). **Christ is “in you”** and is your Intercessor and High Priest. Then, you cannot sin or be guilty. Christ lives “in you” by God’s Holy Spirit, but only in your hearts and minds.

To continue following the flesh is to be **carnally minded**, still making choices in your **mind** by the pulls or weakness of your flesh. Having *Christ In You* has to do with the **mind** and not your body. *Christ In You* only deals with your **mind** or **how you think!** Your heart is then flesh (God’s “**love**”) and not of stone (II Corinthians 3:13).

A carnal-minded individual, who tries to be either **good** on their **own** by human ability or through their works or effort, never pleases God. Even trying to please God, “**living right**” by your own human ability, never pleases God. Your flesh or human effort will never please God (Romans 8:8). God is “**the one**” who does **the work**, not you!

All **Christian growth** only has to do with your **minds** and **hearts**. **Spiritual growth** can never be achieved by human effort because the flesh will always be **weak**. Paul tells you what is required for **spiritual growth** or *Christ In You*. If you are not in the flesh, following human effort or works, and have The Holy Spirit of God “**in you**,” then your **body** is **dead** (Romans 8:9-17). Every time survival of the fittest such as reproduction (sex), hunger, thirst, clothing, safety or self-survival prevails over *Christ In You* or God’s Holy Spirit, **you will sin**. As Christians, you need to **repent** and be forgiven. Then, your High Priest, Melchizedek,

intervenes and your minds and hearts are clean to follow God's Holy Spirit because Jesus confesses your sins and you are **saved** (Romans 10:9-10). You are then, sinless, "**in Christ.**"

Paul said following human effort or works will bring you death (Romans 8:13). But if God's Holy Spirit leads you in your thoughts and minds, your fleshly desires **can be overcome**. God is a **God of "choice"** and as Christians, God demands **you begin to make right choices** because His Holy Spirit reveals His **truth** through *Christ In You*. God will never take possession of anyone. You are always **free** to choose to follow your flesh or **the truth** God reveals in your mind by God's Holy Spirit, His unblemished "**Spirit.**" The choice is yours just as it was with Adam and Eve. You either choose God's Tree of Life, The Holy Spirit or you go the other way and choose The Tree of Good and Evil (confusion) which is Babylon.

By making the right choice in your mind and heart, you then are led by God's Holy Spirit, and therefore, are The **Sons of God** (Romans 8:14). The Spirit of God removes bondage or confusion in your minds and you will be able to speak clearly, honestly, truthfully to God in your prayers and call out, "Daddy," "Father" or "Papa" (Romans 8:15). How does this happen? God has made a promise that He will hear you (Luke 11:13).

God's answer through Paul, "**The spirit itself [God's] beareth witness with our spirit [in man], that we are the children of God**" (Romans 8:16). That is **adoption**. You change from **fleshly human beings**, led by the flesh, to **Godly children** led by God's Holy Spirit, which makes your mind see and understand **the truth** or **reality**. You are now growing **spiritually**. You are God's family because you can understand and speak honestly and truthfully with your **new heavenly** Father, God, Almighty. That is what

Christ In You means and exactly how you come from an adoption of human birth to a **spiritual birth** because “flesh” is “**flesh**” and “**spirit**” is “**spirit**.” One with the **other** cannot be united. That is why God is not interested in Christians keeping **The Letter** of The Law or any other pagan religious system. It only applies to those **who live** or follow their human flesh or works with human effort. The flesh totally dies; The Law demands it (Romans 6:23). “**The wages of sin is death.**” Once you die, the body becomes dust or ashes. The “**spirit**” or “pneuma” (God’s **quickening energy**) goes back to God.

Once you grow **spiritually**, your “**spirit**” “*pneuma*” is combined with God’s Holy Spirit, which makes your “**spirit**” clean or Holy. The “**spirit in man**” is **neutral** and can be influenced by good or evil. Yielding to God’s Holy Spirit, by choice, only then will you be able to do **good**. Once you receive a “**Spirit**” body, as God and Christ has (I Corinthians 13), you will see them as they are because you will be just as they are (I Corinthians 13:12). That is the **mystery of *Christ In You***. You truly become as God with His **mind** and **heart**. Now, you know God by His Holy Spirit. With ***Christ In You*** what must you do?

God Vs. Evil

What does it mean to be demon possessed? Did you know even Satan is possessed with many demons or unclean spirits? When Satan realizes he only has a short time before Christ’s **return**, his anger causes unclean spirits to come out of his mouth (Revelation 16:13). The English word “unclean” in Greek is “*akathartos*,” which means “**impure**,” but is derived from a root meaning “demonic.” **Satan has a demonic spirit**. Remember, “**spirit**” is “**spirit**” and “**flesh**” is “**flesh**.” A “**spirit**” or “pneuma” is **life energy**, but in this case “it is of foul or **unclean energy**.” That is

being **demon possessed**. Since it is energy, which is evil, it must have a body to function physiologically.

Jesus said, “**When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he walketh through dry places, seeking rest [or another living body to occupy] and findeth none**” (Matthew 12:43). Demons cannot function outside of a vehicle or body. While still in the man, the demons asked Christ if they could enter the pigs. That is why when Christ cast demons out of a man, they wanted to enter the pigs. Jesus let them leave the possessed man and plunge into the pigs. They then ran all the way down and drowned in the lake (Matthew 8:28-32). Once these “**unclean spirits**” left the man, they could not speak since pigs only squeal. Demons must be in humans to be able to speak.

Now, the real warning to humanity. Christ said, when the demons are cast out of the man, he was now clean-minded. Christ used the example of the demons with no place to go, then wanted to enter back into the man who was clean-minded. They, then, could take seven more “**evil spirits**” with them and entered into the man. Jesus explained the last state of the man was worse than the first (Matthew 12:44-45).

The lesson is both **good** and **evil** – functioning by your desired choice. If you allow your minds to become **evil** in **thoughts** or **self-centered**, or evil towards God and His **creation**, you subject yourselves to evil or “**demonic spirits**” or energy. Science calls these people “psychotic.” Science finds a mentally psychotic mind or “*pneuma*” can only be controlled by drugs. They say they are mentally ill. This is true.

However, medical science cannot cast out the demons. They only can block their influence upon the mind. The drugs block the

message or “**evil spirits**” from the brain. A person who has a psychosis must stay on drugs. Why? Unless “the evil,” “**demonic spirit**” or “foul unclean energy” leaves a person, one can only function normally by temporarily blocking the brain with drugs, which allows the mind to function properly. Only by a demon leaving a person can one become well or normal permanently. This evil, unclean energy, must be cast out of this demonic mind. Drugs do not heal a psychotic mind since **spirits** are not physical. Therefore drugs only block the brain from the effect upon the mind.

Since a human mind in its normal or healthy state can make conscious choices because it has a **conscience** it can be hindered by a “**foul spirit**” or demon. When conscience is blocked, psychotic behavior is the outcome. There is **no conscience** in a demonic person. They are then in darkness and cannot see clearly.

That is why a **murderer** has **no conscience**. They have become so **obsessed** with hate or covetousness, which is idolatry; they no longer perform as normal with healthy minds. What has all this to do with becoming like Christ?

Three States Of Mind

When Adam and Eve were created by God, they were flesh or human. They were subject to all the desires of the flesh. Once they ate the forbidden fruit they knew they would die. Before this offense, they had **eternal life** available to them if only they ate of The Tree of Life, God’s Holy Spirit. They could choose to obey or not to obey, to be **good** or **evil**. It all depended upon **survival of the fittest!** This was a normal state of humanity with a conscience for either good or evil. In this state, you see God refers to “humanity” as an “**anthropos**,” in the Greek language.

The scientific term “anthropology” is the study of human beings in this condition. Humans in this mental condition are considered normal or mentally healthy. One has a **conscience** of good and evil. However, to have *Christ In You*, you must become perfect (Matthew 5:48). To do so, one has to have a change of nature. You must become Holy with God’s “**mind**” (Ephesians 1). You must grow into the maturity of Christ (Ephesians 4:13). There it is. Each person, **growing spiritually** in “**the resurrection**” receives his or her appropriate designated rewards. It all depends how much one becomes like Christ in their human life.

To be “in Christ” or have *Christ In You* by God’s Holy Spirit, you will, then, have **The Mind of Christ** (Philippians 2:5). It is, however, their matter of choice. God wants you to choose first as Adam and Eve had a choice to be “good” or “evil.” Remember, your normal human condition from birth is to be both, good and evil. This is because of your flesh and your desire to survive.

God, however, wants you, by your own choice, to **repent**, to be Holy like He is and His Son, Jesus, so you can have a truly healthy mind, which purges your conscience to **always be good** (Hebrews 9:14). Then **Christ is “in you”** until you fully mature to **the stature of Jesus** (Ephesians 4:13). The warning you must always be aware of, is the possibility you can, by choice, choose Satan and his mind. The choice is yours and God wants everyone to be **saved** and have **Christ “In You”** – The Hope of Glory (Colossians 1:27).

CHAPTER 3

CHRIST'S WITNESS

Many Christians believe preaching The Gospel is making non-Christians aware God's "kingdom" will come. Some even believe, they alone, have the only true message of what a Christian is and what a Christian should be preaching to others. God said everyone only knows "in part" (I Corinthians 13). This error wastes much effort and time duplicating the effort of other Christian groups. What did Jesus, His Disciples and followers say they should be busy doing?

God's "kingdom" will be on earth and it is The Good News of *The Gospel*. This Good News must be preached. Notice, however, what each personal Christian should be busy doing!

A Witness

Just before Jesus departed to His Father's throne in heaven, Christ said the following, "**But ye shall receive power, after that The Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth**" (Acts 1:8). There it is. Christians are to be witnesses of Christ. This is far more than just sitting in church every week, praying or giving donations. One of the greatest mistakes a Christian can make is to believe Christianity is to be left at **the church door** when he or she leaves. Your

very life and how you live it, determines if you are **witnessing** whether you know it or not. God and Jesus are interested in how you live your life. Just what is a Christian “witness” and exactly what are you to **witness**? You will, then, understand why Jesus has given Christians, God’s Holy Spirit.

Witnessing – A Legal Matter

Jesus Christ introduced a *New Covenant* or contract when He gave His **life**. *The Old Covenant* made by Moses was **only** to be a **witness** or **shadow** of the **new**. It was a **human effort contract**. When The Messiah came and died, *The New Covenant* went into force (Hebrews 9:14-17 and Hebrews 3:1-3). As Paul said, *The Old Covenant* under Moses with The Letter of The Law was **waxing old** (Hebrews 8). This *Old Covenant* ended with the destruction of **the temple** in 70 A.D. The **new wine**, which was Christ’s death and **not the old wine**, which was the blood of animals **was no longer enforced**. Christians are to **witness** Christ, not *The Old Covenant* any longer. Now, with the death of The Messiah, *The New Covenant* was in force for all Christians as Christ’s “**witness.**” *The New Covenant* becomes a **legal matter** and as with any **testament** or **will** must have **two witnesses** according to The Law or *Torah*, which was a shadow or type of **the truth** of *The New Covenant* (Hebrews 9:18-28). Who are these **two witnesses**? You will be able to see Christians are to testify as Christ’s **witnesses** that Jesus is The Christ (Matthew 16:18). But, *The Bible* tells you it takes **two witnesses** to ratify a “will” so as to make it legal. So, who are to be these witnesses?

The Two Witnesses

Just before Jesus **returns** to establish God’s **kingdom** upon earth, He has His **two witnesses** ratify His “**testament**” or “**will**” (Rev-

elation 19:10) to the world. Revelation 11:1-7 defines these **two witnesses** as God's **two candlesticks**. What are these **two candlesticks**? Jesus said they are **churches** (Revelation 1:20). What **two churches** are these? Revelation 7:1-10 reveals these **two candlesticks** are **144,000 Israelites** and **the innumerable multitude of The Gentiles**. What **two churches** are these? One is **The Church in The Wilderness**, the remnant of Israelites, and the other is **The Churches of God, The Gentiles** (Acts 7:37-38).

These **two churches** are to be **the witnesses** of *The New Covenant* as revealed in *The Book of Revelation*, which is **Christ's "will"** (Revelation 19:10 and Revelation 1:1-3). Reread *Revelation Uncovered*, and check with *The Bible* for proof. Notice, these **two churches** – **Israel** and **Christians**, and especially during The Great Tribulation are to **witness Christ's "will"** or *New Testament*. How are they to **witness**? By coming **out of the world** and being an **exact duplication** of their Savior, Jesus, The Christ (Revelation 18:4). Every Christian and Israelite is to come out of Babylon and all the **religious confusion** and **witness** the true Jesus, The Messiah and the real One God and Father of every human that ever existed. So, exactly how are you to **witness Christ**?

The Son And The Father

Jesus defines a witness of His, very clearly. Christ said, "**Verily, verily, I say unto you, He [a witness] that heareth my word, and believeth on Him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation [judgment]; but is passed FROM DEATH UNTO LIFE**" (John 5:24). This cannot be any plainer. What "words" did Christ say you are to believe? Jesus told His **witnesses** to not exist by food alone but by every "**word**" or "**logos**" which comes from God, The Father's mouth! (Matthew 4:4). There it is. **A witness of Christ, in faith, lives by every**

“word” which comes out of God’s mouth. How simple to read, but so difficult to do. This **“word”** or **“logos”** is manifested by His Son, Jesus, through The Holy Spirit (Hebrews 1:1-3). You are to **come out of Babylon** or **worldly confusion** by living every Word of God (Revelation 18:4). God’s **“word”** or *The Holy Bible* is to be your standard. How are you to know **the truth**, which sets you **free** (John 17:17)? You must be checking your *Bible* and learning continually what it is really telling you (I Corinthians 14:29). You must do what The Bereans did when Paul preached (Acts 17:11).

By God’s **Word** in **faith** you are to believe every **“Word”** or **“logos”** of God and become just like The Son of God, Jesus, and The Father in Heaven (Matthew 5:48). That is a **true witness** of Christ’s **“will.”** By **witnessing** *The New Testament*, which is **Christ’s “will”** you validate by **faith** that *The Gospel* of God’s **“kingdom”** will come upon this earth with **The Return of Jesus** (Revelation 11:15). Then, these **two witnesses** certify **Christ’s “testimony”** or **“will” is the truth.**

Good Fruit

When **Christ dwells “in you”** by God’s Holy Spirit, which leads you to **truth** (John 17:17), you, then, can **bear fruit.** By **good fruit** it becomes apparent to others **Christ** is, indeed, **“in you”** with **the hope of glory or salvation.** Why is it important to show **good fruit** to others? By **bearing good fruit** in your lives, which manifests you are of **God as His children** and **not** one of Satan’s children (Matthew 13).

The Commission

Forty days after **His resurrection**, Jesus was ready to depart to

God. Then, The Apostles asked Him a very important question (Acts 1:4-8). During His forty days on earth Jesus taught The Apostles about God's coming "**kingdom.**" At this point, they only understood God's **kingdom** as a physical kingdom on earth (as during King David's day). They asked Him, if He would restore "**the kingdom**" to Israel.

Christ answered and said only The Father knows when that will happen. Now for an extremely important statement by Christ. Jesus said, "**But ye shall receive power, after that The Holy Spirit is come upon you: and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth**" (Acts 1:8). Quite a statement, don't you think? Were they to preach *The Gospel* of The Kingdom? Yes! This, however, was a different commission. Besides preaching *The Gospel* of God's "**kingdom**" they were to bear **witness of Jesus**. That is **Christ "In You"** and you now have the proof. Why and what does it mean to **witness Christ**? This was a **new commission** not only for Christians but to the entire world.

What Is A Witness?

The common teaching over the years has taken the form, in many cases, of Christians coercing others to believe in Christ and God's "**kingdom.**" Some Christians believe this is **witnessing Christ**. But Jesus said to **not** go from **house to house**, but only where the **son of peace** is (Luke 10:5-7). Christ revealed you are only to **witness** Him where "**the son of peace dwells.**" You are only to **witness** where you are asked or accepted (Luke 10:5-6). Force or salesmanship or even advertising was and is not **your Savior's way**. When He was invited, He had dinner and lodged where He was welcomed. The works of **your Savior** was **one of a servant or keeper** and not pushing or selling Himself to others (Philip-

pians 2). He was totally **a servant and never acted as a lord**. Christ specifically warned His Disciples and Apostles if they wanted to be greatest in God's "**kingdom**" they must be the best **servants** who only wanted to serve. The Greek implies "one who waits on tables." Jesus, as The Greatest, was and is the **best of all servants**. If Christ be "**in you**" and you are to be **His witnesses to the world**, then, you must be the best servant, a willing servant to everyone you come in contact with (Matthew 20:25-28).

Witness Defined

As humans, your natural impulse is to define your own "partial" meaning to what "a **witness** of Christ" really is. Too many times you may be in error. What does the word, "witness" in Greek mean? The Greek for "witness" is "*marturia*."

It encompasses "a plethora of values." "*Marturia*" in its root conveys "martyrdom." When one witnesses, they "attest to a truth of someone or something even to the death." In this case, **a witness of Christ attests to the truth that Jesus is The Messiah who saves you**.

It emphatically conveys with this **truth** you are willing to go so far as to die or be martyred in declaring **Jesus is The Christ or The Anointed One**. Jesus is "**the promised seed**" in Genesis 3:15 and Galatians 3:16 as **The High Priest, Melchizedek**. That is why Jesus said Peter had "**the keys to the kingdom**" which would show **Jesus was The Christ**.

Christ said only God revealed this to Him, and therefore, He understood and had the keys to God's "**kingdom**." Read completely Matthew 16:13-20. **Christian witnesses** attest to this **truth** even to the death.

The True Witness

Revelation 1:5 states Jesus is **the faithful witness**. How? By being the first to give **His life** or be martyred for **the truth** of God and "**the kingdom**." The Greek, referring to Christ, is "*martus*," in the singular. This **witness** is the **first** one, or God's Son who died for you. Now, you, likewise, are to be **witnesses** of Him, as He was, and to die for Him in declaring "**Jesus is The Christ**." There it is – *The Bible* makes it very clear. You are to be just as Christ was. **Christ**, then, is "**in you**" and Jesus, then, is "**ALL AND IN ALL**" (Colossians 3:11).

Why You Are A Witness

Why does God want you to be a **witness of His Son, Jesus**? Christ's servants have the **testimony** of Jesus (Revelation 19:10). It continues and declares you should only worship God. Why? Because the **testimony** of Jesus is **the Spirit** or **mind of prophecy**. What prophecy?

By Christ being your **faithful witness** with His death, you, yourselves, are to be **kings** and **priests** (Revelation 1:5-6). You must be **witnesses of His**, so He can prepare you to be **kings and priests**. Why is a **witness necessary**? You are to **witness Christ's testimony**, which is **prophecy in action by contract or covenant from God**. The Greek word for "testament" or "testimony" is the same word for "**witness**," or "martyred." The "**witness**" or "testifier" is willing to acknowledge **the truth** of this agreement or covenant with God even to the death. This is how Christians sign *The New Covenant's* "**will**" as **witnesses**.

Paul declares a **testament** or **will** only goes into force after a person dies (Hebrews 9:15-18). Until death occurs, **the will** is not in

force. For this **will** of God's to occur, Jesus was the first **faithful witness** when He died (Revelation 1:5). For any "**will**" or "**covenant**" to be enforced, it must contain two **witnesses**. After Jesus died, this **testament, if it is** to be **validated**, requires at least **two witnesses** according to God's Law (Hebrews 10:28-29).

Old And New Covenant

Many Christians and Jews do not realize God has **two witnesses**. That is why *The Bible* was divided into two parts, *Old and New Testaments*. Both Jews and some Christians do not really understand why there is a division between *The Old Covenant* and *New Covenant*. The Old is based upon **human works** and *The New Covenant* is to be **Christ "In You."**

Most believe **the only reason for the split** between **the two covenants** was when God rejected Israel. With The New Testament Church, Israel was no longer God's **witness** as The Church in The Wilderness (Acts 7:37-38). However, there is much more to it than just a change of "**witnessing**" – *The Gospel*.

Paul's Words

Paul describes the two olive trees, **natural** and **wild** (Romans 11) which represent Israel and The Gentiles as His **witnesses** in Revelation 11. Paul admits God had, for the time being, rejected **Israel as His witness**. Only a remnant is now **saved**. However, during The Millennium, the entire nation of Israel will be **saved** (Romans 11:26).

Now, for a real surprise! The Apostle states if some Israelites believe (The Messiah), then they will be **grafted back** into the natural olive tree (Romans 11:23-25).

Once some of The Israelites **repent**, God very willingly will graft them back into The Church in The Wilderness as His **witness**. Amazingly, once again, you have **two witnesses**.

The 144,000 **Israelites** will **repent** and an **innumerable multitude of Gentiles** grow **spiritually** (out of Babylon) (Revelation 18:4), and will be the **two witnesses** who come out of The Great Tribulation (Revelation 7 and Revelation 11). During The Great Tribulation "**time**" of world trouble and chaos, some Israelites and many Gentiles become **witnesses of Christ** at that time. They are now sealed by God with His Holy Spirit and they have **Christ "in them"** (Revelation 7:3). Both are Christ's **witnesses: The Church of God and The Church in The Wilderness**. **Scripturally**, it is very clear and simple to understand.

Witness Defined

The Greek definition for "a **witness**" and "a **testimony**" can be synonymous. A **testament** is a **will** or **covenant**. In this case, a **spiritual covenant** and **not** an *Old Covenant*. *The Old Covenant* was based upon animal sacrifice because they needed The Letter of The Law to know "**right**" from "**wrong**" (I Timothy 1:7-10 and I John 3:4). *The Old Covenant* is based only on **human effort** and **works**. *The New Covenant* is predicated upon Christ which **changes your very nature to be like Christ**. God will write His Law (The Ten Commandments) in your heart and mind. Christ becomes "**all and in all**" (Colossians 3:11). From this point on, whether Israelite or Gentile, you all become "**one**" **in Christ** or **Christ "In You!"**

Image Of Christ

Paul declared that God predestinated all **true Christians** should

be conformed to the **image** of His Son (Romans 8:29). The Greek for “**image**” in this case is “*eikon*” or “an icon” in English. An icon is an **idol** or an exact likeness of something else. In this case, Jesus, The Christ. Christians, when being observed by others, look just like Jesus. Their **behavior, attitude, nature** and even **thoughts** are alike. **Christ is truly “in you.”** That is what an “**idol**” is. You worship God’s Son by being just like Him. **YOU EMULATE CHRIST.**

Still Carnal In Body

Your “flesh” or “*soma*” must still battle **The Law of Sin** in your flesh or body (Romans 6 and 7). You still must battle sin in your body as Jesus did when He was human. You will not be sinless until you have a **spirit body** as well as a **spiritual mind** or Holy “*pneuma*” like God (I Corinthians 15). Since Jesus is a **Spirit Being** and has no sin and is totally like His Father, God makes the big difference **between you** and Jesus today (Hebrews 1:3). Jesus at the right hand of God has the brightness of God’s “**glory**” (all of God’s **riches**) and is the express **image** of His Father. The Greek for “**image**” in this case, because, you, being a “human” Christian, are only in “**a likeness**” of Christ (idol). Christ is the **exact** “character” or “character of His Father” in His “**being,**” **mind, heart** and **spirit**, which is now totally of God’s Holy Spirit. Jesus has God, The Father in Him and God is “**all and in all**” in Christ just as He will be “**in you**” when you have **spirit bodies** as Jesus does (I Corinthians 15:28). Jesus is now God or exactly as The Father. You will be the same when you receive **spiritual bodies.**

The Earthly Jesus

When Jesus was human, within His body “*soma*” of sin, He liter-

ally lived by every Word of God. How did Jesus live? Jesus was more **righteous** than **the scribes** and Pharisees because He kept The Ten Commandments **SPIRITUALLY** (Matthew 5, 6 and 7). He never judged anyone. He gave those in need whatever he had and only did **good works** such as healing people, healing their minds, feeding them and raising them when they died. He gave all He had. What is a **witness of Christ**? A **witness** is one who does everything His Savior did – all good works, in helping his neighbor, feeding the poor, assisting the orphans and living by every Word of God. That is a **witness** of Christ!

Being a witness is not running around and telling everyone about your “**church**” or religion. The Apostle Peter clearly explains how you are to **preach God’s “word.”** Peter said, “**But sanctify the Lord God in your hearts: and be ready always to give an answer to every man that asks you a reason of the hope [Gospel] that is in you with meekness and fear**” (I Peter 3:15). Nothing can be any clearer.

Peter relates seven points:

- 1 **Sanctify God** (“*Hagios*” keep God Holy).
- 2 **In your hearts, your very life purpose and motive.**
- 3 **Answer every man.**
- 4 **With the hope or *The Gospel* of God’s “kingdom.”**
- 5 **You must be asked, first and not pressure any one.**
- 6 **Be meek and cause no offense.**

7 Have humility, a Godly fear and do as Christ would do.

There you have it. *Christ In You* doesn't mean by trickery, salesmanship or other human efforts to convince others or even entertain others, but **first** and **foremost** those being **witnessed** must see you live **exactly like Him** in all you can be and know (according to your level of **spiritual growth**). That is *Christ In You*, as you **witness** being non-judgmental, non-offensive but completely giving with God's "*agàpè/love*" with a total attitude of sacrifice on your part. That is a **witness** of *Christ In You*, not so much by words but how you **live** as He lived. That is a **true witness** of Jesus and His **testimony** or **will** which is *The New Covenant of hope and faith!* Remember, Jesus as God's **faithful witness** gave His life for you.

CHAPTER 4

A ROYAL PRIESTHOOD

The Apostle Peter said, “But ye are a chosen generation, a Royal Priesthood, a Holy nation, a peculiar people; that ye should shew forth the praises of Him who hath called you out of darkness into His marvelous light” (I Peter 2:9). This is amazing. Peter is telling Christians what a “witness of Christ” is to do.

Christians, as Christ’s witness, must show the praises of God through Jesus by being a Royal Priesthood. Christians, in this present life, are to be priests. Yes, part of Christianity’s future reward during The Millennium is to be kings and priests (Revelation 1:6). Amazingly Christians are to be priests right now. It is a part of what Christians are to witness!

Peter also said Christians comprise a **spiritual house of priests**. What is Peter telling you (I Peter 2:5)?

The Old Covenant Priests

Moses told Israel they would be a chosen nation and they would be a Kingdom of Priests (Exodus 19:5-6). Both of God’s **two witnesses**, **Church in The Wilderness** and **The Church of God** were to be **priests**. To be God’s **witness**, one must be a **priest**. What does that mean? You must be Holy or **righteous**. Israel was

to become **righteous** by The Letter of The Law or by their human effort or works.

Israel proved they couldn't do it by **the righteousness** of The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25). That was *The Old Covenant* or "**will**" which ended in 70 A.D. (Hebrews 8:13). Only a remnant of Israel becomes **spiritual** (144,000) before Christ's **return**. But Christians **presently** have that responsibility "**spiritually**" to be **Priests** and therefore, **witnesses** of *Christ In You*. What is a **Christian Priesthood**?

Purpose Of The Priesthood

Why does God have Priests? Why are they necessary for Christians? Read the chapter on "The Priesthood," in the book *God's Work* for a complete understanding. In Hebrews 5:1 Paul defines **the reason** for **The Priesthood**. He said every man picked from mankind is chosen by God to do **service** for God. This **service** involves giving gifts and sacrifices for sins.

Do you get the point? Priests are to pay by giving gifts and sacrifices for other people's sins. A **Priest** is not to be judgmental, but an intermediary on behalf of a sinner or criminal, even a criminal who is against God and His creation. What a difference. Rather than showing human ideas of worshipping God, you are to be serving the needs of others even though they themselves are criminals in the sight of God.

Paul declares, as chosen priests, you must have compassion on the ignorant who don't know better and those who have forgotten God's **way** (Hebrews 5:2-3).

As Priests, Christians must remember, they are also sinners or

criminals. You are as weak as those you are trying to help. Since you know everyone sins, you also must offer sacrifices for yourselves as well as others. There it is. Priests are to be humble, giving-type humans just as Christ was. You are to do the same thing as Jesus did. The Apostle Paul said the same in Romans 14:1. You are to accept those weak in **the faith**, but never try to convince them how wrong they are. No doubtful disputation. You should be ready to give an answer, however, whenever you are asked about the hope within you (I Peter 3:15).

Then Paul goes on and states, let Christians not, therefore, judge one another. You are to concentrate on not offending other Christians who are not as strong to cause anyone a reason to fail (Romans 14:13). There you have it. A **Priesthood** is established by God to intervene and help others and not yourselves. You are to give them gifts and sacrifices (Hebrews 5:1). You are only to do good works! That is **Christ “In You.”**

Jesus gave the ultimate sacrifice – His “**own life.**” Why? Christ said, “**Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends**” (John 15:13). Jesus sacrificed His own **life** to pay for your crimes. Why?

Christ’s **sacrifice** proved **Jesus loves you**. God is **love** and Jesus **witnessed** that love of The Father by being crucified for you. He and The Father are the same. God is “**love**” and therefore, “Holy” or “without blemish.” God does it all, and He does only for your good.

God And Sacrifice

David said God did not desire sacrifice or offerings. The killing of animals was not to God’s liking (Psalm 40:6). He only allowed

animal sacrifice to show Israel they were still carnal as an animal. A **clean animal** is teachable, but they still had a wrong heart and couldn't keep His Ten Commandments in their hearts (Deuteronomy 5:29).

God did not want a carnal priesthood and carnal laws with animal sacrifices since all this did was to remind them they were still criminals by sinning (Romans 5:20).

God wanted a body who would prove His ultimate love for them and God. David in his prophecy said, "**Lo, I come: in the volume of the book it is written of me**" (Christ) (Psalm 40:7). The entire *Scriptures*, called *The Old Covenant*, pointed to Christ and His "**sacrifice.**" Why? As a **witness of God's promise of salvation** for the world (I John 4:14). Now, you, as Christians, are to carry on that **sacrifice** as a **Holy Nation of Priests as Christ's witness.**

Good Works

During a Sabbath Day, Jesus healed a man and told him to rise, take up his bed and walk (John 5:8). The Jews, knowing it was The Sabbath, said Jesus violated The Law of The Sabbath. Not only did He heal the man, He told him to carry a big load. Notice Christ's reaction to their statement. Jesus said, even on The Sabbath, "**My Father works, and I work**" (John 5:17). This greatly upset The Jews. Christ replied, "**The Son can do nothing of himself, but what he seeth the Father do: for what things soever he doeth, these also doeth the Son likewise**" (John 5:19). Do you understand what Christ said? Jesus told The Jews since His Father works on The Sabbath, so will He. What did He mean? The Greek in this case for "**work**" is "*ergozomai.*" "*Ergozomai*" in Greek signifies "**to toil**" or "**labor.**" In this case, the word

for “human efforts” or “deeds” would be “*ergon*,” but this word “*ergozomai*” literally means “to toil” or “**do hard labor.**” **Why would Christ say that He and His Father do hard labor even on The Sabbath?** Jesus answers by saying He and His Father do **hard labor** on The Sabbath. Christ said He, Jesus, Himself was a greater **witness** than even John, The Baptist (John 5:36). What was that **witness**?

Christ declared as The Father has **life** in Himself and He has given to The Son to have **life** in Himself (John 5:26). There it is. Jesus came to “**Save The World**” (I John 4:14). Therefore, “**For as the Father raiseth up the dead, and quickeneth [energizes] them; even so The Son quickeneth [energizes] whom he will**” (John 5:21).

The Father and The Son have the same **purpose** to **save** humanity. Even if it means to do hard work on The Sabbath. Christ said it is right according to The Law to do good works even on The Sabbath. Why? That was what Christ was to **witness** when He was on this earth! (John 5:36). That is what a **priest** does. Priests have to lift heavy oxen when they sacrifice them on The Sabbath. **Salvation is the issue not religious works.** A **priest** intervenes on behalf of his own sins, as well as, the sins of others.

They must offer a gift or sacrifice for other people’s sins, as well as, for their own sins (Hebrews 5:1). That is **the purpose** of The Priesthood. That is their **witness**, and Jesus is the **faithful witness** of God in doing “**good works**” (Revelation 1:5). Jesus, The Christ, The Anointed High Priest gave His very **life**.

Since “**the mystery of God**” is *CHRIST IN YOU*, (the **hope of glory** or **salvation**), you are also to be **priests** comprising a Holy Nation to God (I Peter 2:9). To be a **witness** of Christ, you are to

be a **priest** just as Jesus was. You are to be **His witness**. You also must **do good works**. What **good works** are required of you?

Gifts And Sacrifices

Paul states each church member has **gifts** given by God (I Corinthians 12 and Romans 12). You are to use these **gifts** to help and serve **the church**. **The church**, therefore, as Christ's "**body**" is a **witness** of **who** and **what Christ was and is**. This **witness** reveals *CHRIST IN YOU* or you do exactly what Jesus did as Christ does exactly what The Father does. And it doesn't matter what day it is. Then you are **all** "**one** with The Father" through Christ. The English word "**gift**" in Greek is "**charis**." "**Charis**" is where the English word "**charisma**" comes from. It means "**a special God-given gift**." You, as **the body of Christ**, are to use those gifts, granted each and every member of **the church** to be of benefit to others. How about the **sacrifices of the priesthood**? Paul declares, "**I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye [Christians] present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service**" (Romans 12:1). There it is, the very definition of what a priest is (Hebrews 5:1). The Body of Christ is a priesthood, a holy nation, being a witness of your High Priest, Jesus, The Christ, after The Order of Melchizedek. This **Priesthood**, which has Christ "**in them**" is willing to use all the gifts God gives His **church** to do good works, even to the place of being a living sacrifice just as Christ was **your sacrifice**. There is your *Bible* proof of a true and faithful **witness** of Christ because everyone will be able to see *CHRIST IN YOU*.

The Eikon

You are at the place to ask the question, with *Christ In You* and be-

ing His **witness**, what are you to look like? Christians, as **priests**, offering yourself as a living sacrifice, what must you **witness** or look like?

Paul, after he told “**the saints**” they must have Christ “**in them**” (Colossians 3:9-10 and Colossians 1:27) and declared you now have put off the “**old man**” which in Greek is “*anthropos*.” This “human image,” which is being “human” with all your human nature can do either **good** or **evil**. Paul reveals you have put on the **new man**, which is renewed in **knowledge** after the **image** of Him that created Him. Now, you have your answer (Colossians 3:10). Christians are to be in **the image** of Christ, Himself. That is *Christ In You*.

The Greek word for “**image**” is “*eikon*.” An “*eikon*” is an “idol” or “a **representation** of the **idol**.” As a **witness** and **priest** who offers themselves as a sacrifice for others will look just like Jesus, your High Priest, who will always **intercede** for you. Just as Melchizedek, (Christ) **you too, must be ready to sacrifice yourself for the good of others**. When you **witness** Christ, the more you grow **spiritually**, the more you represent Jesus as He was upon this earth. Remember, you, still being human, **only look like Him** in “**the works**” you do, just as He did **good works**. You are only a **representation of “the works”** He did, but not in “**the glory**” He has with His Father.

Christ’s Image

Since Jesus is your High Priest, after The Order of Melchizedek, being **spiritual** in His **body** just as The Father is the **exact image** of God. Jesus was exactly like His Father and **not** a mere representation. Paul reveals Jesus is in **the express image** of His Father (Hebrews 1:3). In this case, the English word “image,” in

Greek is “*CHARAKTER*” or “an exact duplicate of God, even in character.” Christ’s image in His **glorified form** is an exact similitude of The Father in every way.

You, being human, with your weakness because of your flesh, can only be an image of Jesus in **representation** of the “**good works**” He did when He was human. **You, as Christians, are not an exact duplicate of Christ.**

Your **witness** is to be like Jesus, in what He said, did and how He behaved. You are truly to have *Christ In You* by **witnessing** and even sacrificing your lives “**to live by every word of God**” just as He did. Then you are offering your gifts and sacrifices to be just like Him. You are a Royal Priesthood, giving of yourselves to God and to your neighbors. As “**the body**” of Christ with “**many members**” you are also to be a Holy Nation representing Jesus on earth as **His witnesses** with **THE TRUTH OF CHRIST “IN YOU!”**

Melchizedek And Levi

Why did God change His Priesthood from Melchizedek to The Tribe of Levi? Understanding the difference helps define why being a **priest** is so important in having *Christ In You*. Amazingly, you find one reason The Levites were chosen by God to be His **Priests** was due to a carnal problem they had.

Paul relates that God replaced The Melchizedek Priesthood by a Priesthood which was very similar to Melchizedek. The English word “similitude” in Greek is “*homoiotes*” which merely means “**resemblance**” or “like.” Both **Priesthoods** were to look or appear alike, but as you will read, they are grossly different – **spiritually**.

A Carnal Priesthood

Paul explains this ‘**Priesthood**’ is based upon a **carnal commandment**. The Letter of The Law was written for **unrighteous, carnal people** who were stubborn, stiff-necked and therefore, **carnal** (Hebrews 7:16, I Timothy 1:7-10 and Deuteronomy 9:13).

Surprisingly even The Tribe of Levi was chosen because they were carnal. Jacob prophesied that Levi was **carnal**. God said Levites are cruel, fierce and full of wrath (Genesis 49:5-7). They had a hard time controlling their anger.

Moses lost the right to enter **the promised land** because he became full of wrath when The Israelites complained about not having water to drink (Exodus 17). So, Moses struck the rock in anger and then took the credit for giving them the water. So, by getting angry and not giving God the credit for the water, Moses did not enter **the promised land**.

God chose The Tribe of Levi to be **Priests** because of their hot temper and wrath. They needed to do more sacrificing than the rest of Israel. Israel was given a carnal Law for carnal people with a carnal priesthood. Why? They needed “**right**” and “**wrong**” spelled out for them. Being stiff-necked or carnal, they had a **wrong heart or nature**. “**Right**” and “**wrong**” had to be written out for them to know the difference between **good** and **evil**.

Even their “**Priesthood**” was fierce and needed to offer sacrifices for themselves, as well as, for the people. The Priesthood was changed because Israel was carnal, and God had to write out “**good**” and “**evil**” if they were ever able to be taught to be God’s **witnesses** to other nations. That is why they were **The Church in The Wilderness** (Acts 7:38). It was a carnal church so had “car-

nal testing” based upon human efforts or works. They failed!

King Of Righteousness

Melchizedek, as High Priest, had an entirely different purpose. The Apostle Paul reveals The Melchizedek Priesthood produces **eternal life** or **salvation**. The Letter of The Law could not offer **salvation**. The Levitical Priesthood could only lead them to Christ by showing them they were sinners (Romans 5:20 and Galatians 3:24). This is the reason The Priesthood was changed from Melchizedek to Levi.

Melchizedek, as High Priest, offers **salvation** and not merely a happy, long, prosperous life in “**the promised land.**” Israel was to be a **physical witness**, which only manifested God’s **righteousness** by The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25).

Melchizedek was a **spiritual** Priesthood based upon being **righteous** through **faith**. Melchizedek is made up of two Hebrew words. “Melec” means “king” and “*tsedaq*” which stands for “**faith.**” This Priesthood is **based upon faith** and **not** any human works of worshipping God. It is a totally based kingship of **faith** or **absolute faith** in God and His Son, even to the death. Hebrews 7:2 reveals Melchizedek is a Priesthood, which is King of Righteousness by “**faith**” and is, therefore, a **King of Peace**.

All **the riches, fullness** of God, with **His Holiness, power, creativity, success** and **prosperity** is contained in **The Priesthood of Melchizedek**. This Priesthood actually changes human nature by purging a person’s conscience and heart to be pure. This Priesthood is completely **faith-based** in belief that *Christ In You* changes your nature to come to the maturity of Christ (Ephesians 4:13). What a difference! All the fullness and riches of God Al-

mighty are in Christ **only**. *Christ In You* is the answer.

Christ's Witness

To be a **witness** for Christ, in The Church of God, you must become a **Priest** after The Order of Melchizedek, just as Jesus. When you become a **spiritual** priest, like your Savior, you must be willing to sacrifice your life just as He did. Then you can be a **true witness of Jesus in His likeness** so the world can behold *Christ In You!*

CHAPTER 5

A SEALED BOOK

In Revelation 5, Jesus is the only “one” worthy to open *The Book with Seven Seals*. No man or any human preacher has been worthy. Only Christ is worthy. This book with the seven seals is *The Book of Revelation*. Revelation 19:10 states this book is a testimony which is “the spirit” or “understanding of prophecy.” Do you grasp the significance of this statement? Without Christ opening the meaning of *The Book of Revelation*, you cannot understand the true meaning of any prophecy in *The Bible*. *The Book of Revelation* had to be part of *The Bible* if you wanted to understand “the truth” of God’s “word.”

Paul said his **apostolic ministry** was to manifest the very “**word**” or “**logos**” of God. In fact, Paul was to fulfill or complete it (Colossians 1:25). Why?

Jesus said **man shall not live by bread** alone, but by every “**word**” or “**logos**” of God (Matthew 4:4). This statement carries a **significant spiritual** meaning. Most people believe Christ said, besides needing food to survive, you must also understand and know how to eat God’s “**word**.” As they say, “there is more to these ‘**words**’ than meets the eye.”

Seeing these words is not enough. You must also understand their **spiritual significance**. Elihu, Job’s friend, said “**days should**

speak and teach wisdom.” Elihu was younger than Job and his friends, so he believed older people, having more experience in life, **should probably be wiser.**

Elihu then said, **“but there is a spirit in man.”** In Chapter 2 of this book, *‘Spirit In Man,’* defines this **spirit** as **life energy** from God. **“The inspiration of The Almighty gives understanding”** (Job 32:7-8). “Inspiration” in the Hebrew is *“neshamah”* or **“divine inspiration.”** “Understanding” in the Hebrew is *“biyn”* “to separate or distinguish.” Elihu is revealing a great **spiritual truth.**

The **“spirit in man”** the **“life energy”** came from God and God is allowing you to receive **this power so you too can know “the spiritual truth” of God.** **Spirit is “spirit”** as Christ said in John 3, but it is God who must reveal what is **the truth** by His Holy Spirit **being “in you.”**

This, however, must come through His Son, Jesus, who is **The Revelator of God’s “word”** (Hebrews 1:2). From Paul’s day, to the present, it is only Christ who is **worthy** to reveal God’s **truth** (Revelation 5). *Christ In You* is the answer. The full meaning of Matthew 4:4 is – **LIVING BY EVERY WORD OF GOD.**

Every Word Of God

Jesus, in reality, is stating a contradiction in Matthew 4:4. He declares humanity needs physical food to exist, but what is really important is to live and to saturate yourselves with **every Word of God** through and by God’s Holy Spirit. This Holy Spirit gives understanding to **“the spirit in man”** as Elihu said (Job 32:8).

Does mankind get it? The **spiritual impact** of Christ’s statement

is food only preserves **one's natural life** which **profits nothing**, but living by every Word of God should be primary in a Christian's life (John 6:63). That is the real significance of Matthew 4:4. However, eating The Word of God can only be understood by Christ manifesting God's Holy Spirit "**in you.**" Eating God's "**word**" produces **salvation**.

The Old And The New

God purposely divided *The Bible* into two parts. One is known as *The Old Testament*, and the other *The New Testament*. Only Jesus has **the testimony**, which reveals God's "**word**" in prophecy. Paul said the same thing in Hebrews 1:3. Understanding only Christ's "**words**" reveal **the truth** of God by Jesus giving you understanding so you can know God's "**word.**" This is a big key in studying *The Old Testament* as opposed to *The New Testament*. If one wants to clearly understand *The Bible*, you have to listen to Christ's "**words**" since Jesus is **the "logos"** or **The Word of God** (Deuteronomy 18:18). That is why Jesus told The Jews that they did not have **God's "words"** in them because they did not understand God's **Word**. *The Scriptures* or *Old Testament* only speaks of The Coming of Christ (John 5:38-47). *The Old Testament* was written to reveal The Messiah or Christ. The Law, (the first five books), was only a **shadow** of things to come which was **prophecy**. You understand it is **only** by **The Words of Christ** which teaches you and gives understanding to *The Old Testament*.

The New Testament tells what *The Old Testament* reveals only as a **prophecy** or a **shadow of things to come** (Hebrews 10:1). That is why I Timothy 1:7-10 states, "**The Law is only given for the unrighteous or unconverted.**" *The Scriptures* or *Old Covenant* was totally based upon **human effort** or **works of the flesh** which could never **please God** (Romans 8:8).

God wants you to worship Him **spiritually, only** (John 4). *The Old Covenant* could never accomplish this. That is why **spiritual growth** is vital. It gives you **salvation** and will give you great rewards (Revelation 22:12). *The New Covenant* was based upon **better promises** for you (Hebrews 8:6). Paul said Christ's **testament** was a **better testament** because it gave **salvation** not merely a successful human existence. This **better testament** also gives each person a chance to multiply his/her own personal rewards.

So plain, so clear, so logical to understand but difficult to do without *Christ In You*. Jesus is The Revelator! Only He is worthy to reveal **the truth** by God's Holy Spirit. *The New Covenant* or "**testament**" reveals how to achieve **eternal life**. When studying *The Bible* you must clearly understand the difference between *The Old* and *New Testament*. Both **testaments** are necessary to understand God's **purpose**, to be **ALL AND IN ALL** and how God is bringing it to pass (I Corinthians 15:28).

A Question

Some time ago a man asked why God is bothering with all of this in the universe. It seemed to him, **very complicated** and **a lot of trouble**. He believed there was a God and He understood God's **purpose**. God firmly answers this question.

Paul in Ephesians 1:9 states God's **purpose** is to be "**all and in all**" because it gives Him **great pleasure**. Since God is **love**, He must share His **riches** or **glory** (I John 4:8). Love is outgoing or totally and completely giving. Love sacrifices **all** to **give**. God's great **purpose** is to make you one of His children so you can share **the great glory** or complete **riches** in Christ, His Son. Nothing makes God happier or more joyful than sharing "**all**" **He has**. That is why God is "**love**" or "**agapè**" which is totally His "to give."

That is *The Bible's* answer as to why God is going to all this **trouble just to make you Holy** as He is Holy. The only reason is it gives Him extreme pleasure to give **His children all the gifts and the riches or glory** which Christ sacrificed so you could be **saved**. God wants His family, all the multiple billions, to be **saved and do all the things He has planned for everyone's inheritance**.

Why Holy?

Besides receiving great pleasure, what is God's reason to make everyone Holy? God wants to be "ALL AND IN ALL" **in everyone**, which can only be done through Christ. The only way to **guarantee, absolutely, God's "kingdom family" lives forever in abject happiness and peace** is to be "**good**" and "**just**" as He is "**good**" and "**just**." Anything less would destroy His "**kingdom**" and bring nothing but misery and pain and suffering to all concerned. God must become **all and in all** (I Corinthians 15:28). There is no other way. Take a look at today's world.

A Matter Of Choice

God has complete freedom or liberty to do whatever He chooses for you. God had a **purpose** and a **plan** whereby all humanity will be able to choose and finally all will confess Jesus is The Savior and then can be **saved**. That is why God created such a perfect plan to **save everyone**. Since **salvation** can only come through His Son (I John 4:14), finally, everyone will confess Jesus is The Lord (Romans 10:9-10). Everyone ultimately will **repent** and choose God's "**way**" (Romans 10:9-10).

Why A Firstborn?

Was it really the best way to have a Firstborn Son, Jesus to die for

you and pay for your sins to be able to bring humanity to God's **way** of being just like Him? To understand the wisdom of God, you need to ask, "Why didn't God just teach mankind Himself?" The answer is: God did.

God taught Adam and Eve personally by **His messenger** as **God's "Ambassador."** Why couldn't God be there, and do the speaking? Remember, Jesus told you "**no man has seen The Father and no man has heard The Father's voice**" (John 5:37). The answer is simple. Paul said "**God is a consuming fire**" (Hebrews 12:29). The universe and Adam and Eve would have been burned up. God, therefore, deals through His **chosen angels who act as agents or messengers**. These messengers must have the ability to take on a human form or mankind would burn up.

The second reason God does not deal directly with mankind is when people sin (and all humans do) Isaiah states God will not even hear you, let alone show Himself to you (Isaiah 59:1-2). Cain was cut off from God, even from His messengers because Cain killed Abel. Cain became a Gentile or **one cut off from God** and left to decide **right** from **wrong** on his own terms. This is when God gave them over to a **reprobate mind**. This is "**man**" as created in his natural state. Man can be good or evil. That is mankind in its natural creation, capable of **good** and **evil** to go their own way (Romans 1:22-28). They now had free choice without knowing "**good**" from "**evil**." "Man" was truly an "*anthropos*" or "animal-like" as defined in Greek. But, why was a Firstborn Son necessary?

God's Witness

Paul said Jesus is the author of your **faith** (Hebrews 12:2). Why did He have to be "**the author**?" Jesus said His Father gives you

the true bread (John 6:32). That is why Christ said, “**Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every Word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God**” (Matthew 4:4). In Christ’s final prayer, Jesus said, “**I have given them thy Word; and the world has hated them**” (John 17:14). There is your answer. Christ is **the author of your faith**, and therefore, has lived every Word of God. He had to become perfect to prove He was The Son of God. Paul stated Jesus was **made perfect** (Hebrews 5:7-9). He had to live every **scripture** proving He was The Messiah. He, by **His life, witnessed by living every Word of God**, that, indeed, He was Jesus, The Christ (John 17:12). Christ had to be the **FIRST FAITHFUL WITNESS** (Revelation 1:5).

How? By living every Word of God (Matthew 4:4). Why? God’s “**word**” is **truth** or **reality**! (John 17:17). Jesus, God’s Firstborn Son, had to **witness** or **prove** that man could live by every Word of God “**if**” he/she **repented** and received God’s “**Spirit**.” Then, God’s “**Spirit**” leads a person to **reality** and **truth**. Why was it necessary for Jesus to prove He was The Messiah as God’s **faithful witness**?

Righteous Judgment

Clearly, Jesus said in God’s “word” that Christians are not to judge by **appearance** but to judge **righteous judgment**. According to God how does one judge **righteous judgment**? The Law states, “**At the mouth of two witnesses, or three, shall he that is worthy of death be put to death; but at the mouth of one witness he shall not be put to death.**” Very plain, without two or three **witnesses**, one cannot be put to death. No Lake of Fire without two or three witnesses.

Jesus said that God has **life**, and therefore, He **gave life** to The Son

to **have life in Himself**. Obviously, *The Scriptures* are telling you at one time, The Son did not have “**life**.” God gave “**life**” to Jesus just as Christ will give you “**life**” in The Judgment (John 5:26). Because Jesus can now give “**life**” to others, since He now has “**life**,” God has given Him **authority to execute** judgment. Why? Because Christ is **The Son of Man** (John 5:27).

Many ponder why Jesus kept saying He is The Son of Man. Very simply, one who is born or a son of man is **human**. Being human, they in the natural **unconverted** state can be both good and **evil**. In every way, Jesus was a human being and therefore, subject to sin. He, in every, way was tempted as you are tempted. Paul said in Hebrews 2:18, “**For in that he himself hath suffered being tempted he is able to succor them that are tempted**” (Hebrews 2:18). The Greek word for “succor” is “*boetheo*,” defined as “to help,” “aid” or “relieve.”

There it is. **Jesus judged righteous judgment always to help the guilty to change or become a righteous one**. Even those thrown into The Lake of Fire are thrown in to help them **repent**. Read the book *God's Work*. Jesus said, “**for The Father judges no man**” (John 5:22). “Man,” in Greek is “*anthropos*” or “the natural born man which is good and evil.”

Jesus was born **The Son of Man** or **The Natural Man**, totally human with carnal nature or that innate desire; survival of the fittest. Still being human and **tempted** like all **humans**, he lived by every Word of God and by doing so became **perfect** like His Father. This qualified Jesus as a **true witness** and **faithfully** proved He was The Messiah. That is why He became the **author of your “salvation.”** How simple, The Father couldn't come to earth because **He is a burning fire** and secondly, God is sinless, totally good, therefore, has no companionship with sin.

Finally, God could not judge each human **righteously** unless God became human and experienced human nature with all its **temptations**. **Only when He won over His flesh could He be a righteous judge**. The ultimate reason Jesus was The Christ or Messiah was **He gave His “life” for all the sins of humanity**. This qualified Jesus as Melchizedek, The High Priest who loved **righteousness** and gave His “life” though sinless and as a **faithful true witness** qualified to be **the righteous judge of the world and save it** (I John 4:14). That is why God had to have **His First Begotten Son** be a **faithful witness** to the world, and therefore, becoming its righteous judge. Oh, the greatness and goodness of God!

True Witness

Christ said the reason He proved He was God’s **witness** was His **witness** was not of Himself (John 5:30-31). If Jesus continually said He was The Son of God, it would only be His own “**words**” or “**thoughts**.” That is why He was reticent to acknowledge who He truly was. **True servants** of God do not **witness themselves**, but it is The Father who does **the witnessing** that you are God’s **servant** (John 5:30). Notice that is exactly what Christ said, “**There is another that beareth witness of me; and I know that the witness which he witnesseth of me is true**” (John 5:32).

Then, besides The Father as His **witness**, Christ said, “**The works, which The Father hath given me to finish, the same works that I do, bear witness of me, that The Father has sent me** (John 5:36).

Then in the next verse, Jesus said with The Father as His **witness** and His **works** you have **two witnesses**. Therefore, according to The Law, Jesus was The Messiah and was sent from God. That is why Christ continued and said, “**Search the scriptures; for in**

them ye think ye have eternal life and they are they which testify [or witness] of me” (John 5:39).

Now, **you have three witnesses to prove Jesus was The Christ** or Messiah. The **three witnesses**, which give you the **righteous judgment** or **the truth**:

- 1 The Scriptures validated Christ.
- 2 God, The Father, witnesses Jesus who lived every Word of God.
- 3 Finally, Christ’s “works” proved He was The Messiah.

Jesus is truly the faithful witness of God’s truth and therefore is worthy to give salvation and unseal The Truth of God in God’s **word**.

CHAPTER 6

WHO HAS THE MARK OF THE BEAST?

When you read the book, *Revelation Uncovered*, you find The Mark of The Beast is a revival of The Holy Roman Empire. It calls itself Holy because it claims to be God's "kingdom on earth." However, it is totally of human origin and not of God. Why? It is based upon competition, one outdoing the other, rather than by God's way of "inheritance." Read Chapters 4 and 5, 'Who Is The Beast' and 'Mark of The Beast' in *Revelation Uncovered* to fully comprehend this phenomenon.

Mark Is A Number

Those with The Mark of The Beast have a number marked within them (Revelation 13:18). That number is 666. The number is defined as The **Number of a Man**. Man was created on the sixth day and therefore, man's number is "6." Three sixes, 666, denotes "finality" or "completion." Those with this number are in the final stages which mean "**The Times of The Gentiles**" are about to be fulfilled or end. Christ is ready to **return**.

Since "six" is man's number (created on the sixth day), this was the first man given **life** which was Adam. Man in his natural-born state is a mixture of **good** and **evil**. He is free to choose his own personal path. Each can create their own little gods. This Mark of The Beast is totally carnal or as a wild **animal**, a lion, leopard or a bear (Revelation 13). This fourth beast, The Holy Roman Empire,

is a **composite** of all the previous three beasts, the lion, leopard and a bear, completely carnivorous and **competitive**. Survival of the fittest dominates this end-time government composed of **ten world rulers**, one competing against the other, yet **united** for their overall benefit. They are truly a **mixture** of **iron** and **clay** (Revelation 13). How can you tell who has this Mark of The Beast?

Not A Sign

Many interpreters of this number, **666**, have theorized that it is an **observable sign**. Some say it is one's social security number. Others claim they are cardholders who are members of The United Nations. On it goes, but let *The Bible* tell you what type of **sign it is**. The Greek word for "mark" denotes "**an etching**" or "**scratching**." Therefore, it is a sign that is **visibly observable**. But, what kind of a **sign can it be**?

A Witness

In *The Book of Revelation*, Chapter 7, The Apostle wrote God **seals His servants** with a seal to **protect them** from the catastrophes which will encompass the earth. These are **the seven trumpets**. God's servants are His **witnesses** (Revelation 14). The Greek word for "seal" is "*sphargis*." The **word** defines a "**genuineness**," "fencing in" or "protecting" which means "private" or "off limits to anyone." This also represents a **stamp of approval for the converted**, just as The Mark of The Beast is a stamp for **the unconverted**.

One **seal** is **genuine** and is protected. The other **mark** denotes carnality or a mixture of good and evil at its worst. Now, you can understand these two signs. One sign is real and true. The other is

false. How do you tell these two signs apart? One has The Mark of The Beast while the other has **the seal** of God. The Beast Mark is not real, but God's **seal** is real and very genuine.

The Images

You now find **two signs**: God's **sign** and The Beast's **sign**. As God pours out His **wrath** upon **The Beast**, the third angel with the third vial cries out with a loud voice, "**If any man worship the beast and his image, and receives his mark [beast] in his forehead or in his hand, The same shall drink of the wine of the wrath of God**" (Revelation 14:9-10). So, they end up going into The Lake of Fire.

This **mark** or **sign** is an **image**. What kind of **image**? The Greek word "*eikon*" is "**image**" in English. An "*eikon*" is an "**idol**." This **idol** "looks like something or someone else." The Greek definition is a "representation" or a "resemblance." This **idol** resembles **The Beast**. Who is this Beast? This Beast gets its power from the dragon (Revelation 13:4). The **dragon** is **Satan**, the devil (Revelation 12:9). **Since The Beast's power comes from Satan, he carries The Real Mark of The Beast**. This **mark**, 666, is **Satan's mark**. Satan's **way** or **image** in one's forehead, the **mind** or in the hands denoting the lifestyle of earning a living. It is formed totally by **Satan**. The Mark of The Beast is Satan's type of living and it began in The Land of Eden or paradise when Adam and Eve ate of The Tree of Good and Evil.

Eve was deceived and bought Satan's story so she could know **good** and **evil** as a "god" herself (Genesis 3). That is Satan's "image" as a **way of life** whereby a person decides for themselves what is **good** or **evil**. Remember, this image is an "*eikon*" or "**idol**." It resembles Satan and his image. The world will be **de-**

ceived because this human system, based upon **competition**, is very attractive. Why? The world will be prosperous and worship this image. Who wouldn't want a successful life? In fact, they will want to be just **like this image** because the world will be so successful and so prosperous. **Peace, peace, when there is no peace.**

It's Genuine

Contrary to Satan's **mark**, God's **seal** or mark is **genuine** and **real**. It isn't as Satan's, which is a deception claiming to be God's "**kingdom**" on earth **with a human system of religion** which will be a complete lie!

On the other hand you know Jesus is the express **image** of The Father (Hebrews 1:3). In this case, the word is "*charakter*" in Greek, which is "character" in English. Christ is an exact image of The Father. Jesus has the express "**character**" of The Father. This is no "*eikon*" or "**idol**" merely resembling God, The Father. Jesus is genuine, the real image. The Greek word for "express" is the same word as "image" when you read Hebrews 1:3. Paul said Jesus is the **express** character and essence of The Father. He is **the genuine article** of The Father. Both have **spiritual bodies** and **Holy spiritual hearts** and **minds**. They are exactly alike. If one saw one, they would be seeing the other, as well. Jesus does not merely have a resemblance.

Human Image

Paul said God predestinated or fore-ordained, that Christians are to be in the same "image" as His Son. This word, however, is different than the word "image" in Hebrews 1:3. Christ is exactly like The Father. They are both alike with **spirit bodies** and **hearts**

and **minds** and **character**.

Christians in a carnal human body, cannot exactly look or be like The Son of God. They are still human. The Greek for “image” in this case is “*eikon*,” “idol” or “a resemblance.” How? You can only be like Christ in **your heart, mind and lifestyle**. That is why Jesus said, “**I am the way, the truth and the life**” (John 14:6). You must live exactly the way Jesus did. You, as Christians, must **copy or resemble His way of living**. Jesus lived by every Word of God and proved He was **The Faithful Witness**.

He only did God’s **will** and only did **good works**. Christians must be just like Jesus when He was human upon this earth. He, also, was tempted by his flesh just as you are tempted. You need time to mature to the stature of Christ. The Greek word for “stature” is “*helikia*” or “the same age.” Jesus became “**The Author of Your Salvation**.” And, He continued to grow **spiritually** just as Christians should grow, if you have *Christ In You* (Ephesians 4:13).

You will know God’s **seal is** genuine or real when others **witness** *Christ In You* doing **the same works He did**. Although in the flesh, as a Son of Man, He was **The First Begotten, Faithful Witness of God’s “word,”** you are to follow suit. That is the definition of “**spiritual growth**.” Christians are to be and do just what Jesus did when He was human as The Son of Man. When you are a **witness of Christ**, then you know, Christ is “in you.”

The Unrepentant

Those who **repent** and get **victory** over the **mark of the beast** are **saved** and thankfully, do not have to go through God’s **wrath** (Revelation 15:2). These are God’s **servants** who have grown to come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4). What is the difference?

They do not have **the mark of the beast** any longer and now have God's **seal** (Revelation 7:1-3). Those with **the mark of the beast**, actually, resemble Satan and his way in their foreheads and hands. They worship Satan's **way and lifestyle**. **They are totally human and carnal**. "**The Survival of The Fittest**." They worship Satan's system of **completion** or the "**outdoing**" of others. So, again what is this **mark**? Simply, it is individuals with their **faith, belief and their lifestyle following Satan and beginning to resemble Satan, The Beast and False Prophet**. All you have to do to see this **mark** in Satan's followers is to see how they **live or believe**. It is an obvious **mark**! **They are unrepentant** (Revelation 16:11).

True Witnesses

Since God's servants are coming out of Babylon, they are **the genuine witness** or likeness of Christ when He was human on this earth (*Revelation Uncovered* goes into further details). Amazingly, they are a **genuine witness or likeness of Christ**. Of course, they are only in "the image" or "*eikon*" (idol) or have a "resemblance of Christ" (Revelation 18:4).

They are attempting to be **perfect or holy in their works** just like Jesus. They, however, are a **true witness or likeness** of the same **good works and seek, only, to live by every Word of God**. They are "**spiritually growing**" in Christ. They are faithful witnesses of Christ. Christ showed His **servants "the way"** when He was on this earth as The Son of Man. His **servants are in His resemblance** or idol and look like Christ when He was in the flesh. **His servants are genuine as Christ was genuine**. They pattern their way of **living according to the truth by following Christ**. They are His **true witnesses**. **Christians can emulate Christ because Christ is "in you."**

What **mark** or **seal** of **genuineness** do they have? Just as those with **the mark of the beast** begin to resemble **Satan**; **Christians who have grown spiritually and come out of Babylon resemble Christ**. That is their sign. **THEY ARE THE REAL OR TRUE WITNESSES OF GOD.**

Christ's Early Years

Many people are probably surprised but **Jesus had to grow in God's grace** like any human (Luke 2:52). "Grace" in Greek is "*charis*" meaning "gifts." As Jesus grew in stature, God was with Him continually increasing Him in **gifts** or **riches**, just as He is doing with you. That is why so little is told of His childhood. *The Bible* explores **the life of Jesus** when He received His commission as The Messiah. Prior to that event, Jesus as any other Christian was **spiritually growing** to do "**the will**" of His Father. However, He did have God's Holy Spirit from birth. That is why He displayed such wisdom when He was twelve years old (Luke 2:42, 47).

The Commission

When Christ was thirty, He came to be baptized by John. However, John, The Baptist, refused to baptize Him. Jesus said, "**Suffer it be so now: for thus it becomes us to fulfill all righteousness**" (Matthew 4:15). Christ had to **live every Word of God as His Father's witness**. Jesus was buried in water and put His human flesh (Son of Man) to death. At this precise moment God had His Holy Spirit descend upon Jesus as a dove. Then, a voice from heaven said, "**This is my beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased**" (Matthew 3:16-17).

From that moment and for the next three and a half years, Christ,

as The Messiah, began to **restore all things**, thus defeating all of God's enemies (Matthew 18:11). His first activity was to defeat Satan in the wilderness. Christ was starting **His commission as The Messiah**.

Christ In You

From the day you became a Christian and received God's Holy Spirit, you, likewise, like Jesus, need to continue and grow in the grace and knowledge of Jesus Christ. As long as you are human, this process must continue until you achieve the stature or maturity of Christ (Ephesians 4:13). Why do you need to continue to grow **spiritually**? So you can mature – no longer tossed to and fro – but **living and speaking only the truth**. Growing in God's "**word**" makes you like Christ. The head is Christ. This is how you have *Christ In You!*

Genuine Seal

When you resemble Jesus in all He thought and all He did, you are becoming genuine, an **etching**, idol, "*eikon*" of *Christ In You*. All **your works** are **His works**. You give to the poor, help the sick, encourage the downtrodden along with all the other Godly "**good works**." That is why Jesus said if you do it to one of His, you have done it for Him. Then you have **witnessed** *Christ In You*.

Eventually, the mark of the beast becomes evident. One who has **the mark of Satan** lives like Satan and it becomes obvious to everyone. Those with **the mark of the beast** worship this beastly system of competition, one outdoing the other and not loving or wanting to help one's brother.

Those with God's **seal** are doing good works helping others as

Christ did. To the point of sacrificing one's life for others. What a difference a **true witness** of Christ is. ***Christ In You*** will be obvious to everyone. Those with **the mark of the beast** will stand out by their very natures and lifestyles. Be sure you, yourself, grow **spiritually**, like Jesus and have **God's genuine seal of *Christ In You!***

CHAPTER 7

GOD'S TWO WITNESSES

Christ In You is the answer to salvation with all its rewards. *Christ In You* is the answer to God's mystery. You are, literally, changed in your hearts and minds. You begin to look like Him and you begin to be like Christ. For now, you can be a true witness of Christ and God, Your Father. Have you ever wondered why you have to witness or even who has to witness.

A Will

Did you ever think why a “**will**” is needed when someone dies? Or when a person dies, why you call the contract – a “**will**?” The word “**will**” is a peculiar title for a “contract” or “covenant.” **The biblical story** is startling and yet, you will find it manifests and reveals a “**being's personal mind.**”

Christ said, “**He did not come to this earth to do his own will, but the will of Him who sent him**” (John 6:38). Jesus came as a human being to do God, The Father's “will” and not his own “will.” What is The Father's “will?” Paul said, “**Who will have all men to be saved and to come to the knowledge of the truth**” (I Timothy 2:4)? Only God has the “will” to **save everyone.** **Christ said He came to this earth to do just that** (I John 4:14).

The Apostle Paul expands upon God's “will” and explains exactly **what** God wants done and **why** God wants it done. Paul

declares that **God actually “wills” the adoption** of Christians to be His Sons (Ephesians 1:5-10). From “**a human state**” to “**a spiritual state.**” Why? He does it for only one reason. It gives God pleasure because God is **love**. **God is motivated by the act of giving.**

Paul said, “**In Christ everything in heaven and earth, that is all of humanity, will be saved**” (Ephesians 1:10). Jesus consistently said He came to the earth to do His Father’s “**will.**” A “**will,**” therefore, as a **contract** or **covenant** is nothing more than what **living beings** in their minds want to do for someone else. A “**will**” is the **intent** and **purpose** of a person’s wishes of what they want done with anything and everything they possess.

Paul said God appointed Christ to **inherit** all that God has. As God’s Firstborn Son Jesus is the one who **inherits all things** (Deuteronomy 21:17 and Hebrews 1:1-3). God has appointed Jesus as **His Bishop** or **overseer** to take care of **God’s family**, which is to include the whole world (I John 4:14). That is God’s **will** or **purpose**. Jesus is The Overseer of all mankind (I Timothy 5:8).

Executive Director

Every “**will**” or **contract** has an executive director or overseer – bishop. Now, you start to see truly **what a “will”** or God’s **covenant** really is. The executor, once “**the will**” is to be enforced, is to make sure everything in that “**will**” is executed properly. That is exactly what Jesus said He came to do (John 6:38). Christ is The Overseer or Executive Director of that “**will**” which His Father gave only to Him (Hebrews 1:1-3). Originally, it was lost in The Garden of Eden and Christ had to come to restore what was lost (Matthew 18:11). Once a “**will**” is properly executed it must be **certified** as completed according to its **every directive**. The

judge or **court** stamps its final approval and this is exactly what Christ does.

Paul declared once **all things** such as God's enemies, even **death**, is done away and then The Son, Jesus, gives all authority back to God, **the final judge**, for the certification of this "**will**," God can finally **become "all and in all."** God's "**will**" or **covenant** will be perfectly **executed** (I Corinthians 15:28). What God has ordered of Jesus, as His Executor, is the completion of everything according to God's terms. The Father's "**will**" is **everyone should be saved** and be **Holy** as God so God can be "**all and in all!**" **What a perfect, glorious and Holy plan.**

Jesus, The Qualifier

The Apostle Paul said Jesus is the author or one who qualified by living according to God's "**will**." Christ fulfilled or completed every Word of God written about His qualifications (Hebrews 12:2). Christ is The Anointed One (Matthew 16:16), The High Priest and Intercessor on your behalf (Hebrews 8:6 and Hebrews 7:25). Jesus is The Executive Director to do God's "**will**" as contracted in *The New Covenant* (Hebrews 9:16-17). As your High Priest, after The Order of Melchizedek, Jesus intercedes for you and your sins so you can qualify **to inherit your reward.**

Faithful Witness

As God's **faithful witness** to God's "**will**" now Christ needs two more **witnesses** to His "**testimony**" of the "**will**" (Revelation 1:5). You have read The Law requires two or three witnesses to substantiate **the truth**. Any "**will**" **in court** needs **two or three witnesses** to **certify its conditions**, benefits and benefactors are of a truth, and the bestowers full intentions. No judge or court will

validate a “**will**” without the two witnesses. Who are the two witnesses in **God’s “will”** as testified by His Son, Jesus?

A Witness

A true witness is one who is not merely saying **the will** or **covenant** is factual but also must be honest and trustworthy themselves. Otherwise, the witnesses could be lying and would be therefore, **frauds**. The witnesses themselves must have impeccable credentials. Notice some of God’s examples who were faithful witnesses. Jesus, as proven, has already qualified as a **faithful witness**. Paul lists many examples **through history** of God’s faithful witnesses (Hebrews 11). He starts with Abel and states the list is so long it would take too long to cover everyone. Then, because of these personal individuals who were faithful witnesses, Paul makes an announcement concerning The Church or Christianity (Read Hebrews 11).

Paul summarizes and declared, “**Wherefore seeing we also are compassed about with so great a cloud of witnesses, let us lay aside every weight, and the sin which doth so easily beset us, and let us run with patience the race that is set before us**” (Hebrews 12:1-2). What race does The Church of God have to run? You need to qualify, as **true witnesses**, living every Word of God, as Christ did. Then, you can certify, as **the second witness**, that God’s “**will**” of a **truth** is all **true**! To do so, you must have **Christ In You**, and be just as faithful a witness as Christ was. Now, there is one more witness to go into. **Who is the third witness?**

Two Prophets

A Prophet is nothing more than one who substantiates something, which as yet, has not occurred, but in fact, is **true** and will hap-

pen. This is the reason for a “**will**.” That is why Paul said all **the witnesses** listed in Hebrews 11 received a **good report** because of **their faith** (Hebrews 11:39). They looked to this prophecy of Christ, **His testimony** (Revelation 19:10), which is The Spirit of Prophecy, destined to happen. They were willing to die to substantiate **the truth** of God’s “**testimony**” or “**will**” (Hebrews 11:13).

When you have read *Revelation Uncovered*, it will be a little simpler to steer you to verses which will verify **the biblical truth** that these **Two Prophets** in Revelation 11 are “**two churches**.” They are composed of **The 144,000 Israelites** and **The Innumerable Multitude of Gentiles**, who go through The Great Tribulation, even to death. They declare they are The Two Witnesses who certify The Testimony of Christ, God’s “**will**” (Revelation 7). One Witness, The Innumerable Gentiles are God’s “**called-out ones**,” **The Church of God**. The others are The 144,000 Israelites called by God as **The Church in The Wilderness**. **There you are – all three witnesses of God’s truth and God’s “will” and “purpose” is to be “all and in all”** (I Corinthians 15:28).

Covenant Is Fulfilled

The Law can now be satisfied (Deuteronomy 17:6). The two covenants, *The Old Testament* and *The New Testament*, are now validated to be true and righteous. There are **three witnesses**, Jesus, The Executive Director of “**the will**” and **the two witnesses**, The Church in The Wilderness and the Church of God. **The “will” is certified** and can be put in force or enacted. How?

Kings And Priests

Jesus, as The Christ or The Anointed High Priest after The Order

of Melchizedek, is humanity's mediator to bring the world to **salvation** (I John 4:14). This is God's "**will**" (I Timothy 2:4). As The Author of Salvation, He is truly **the faithful witness**. What about the other two witnesses? You have already proven that Israel and The Church of God are to be a Royal Nation, a peculiar people and a **Priesthood**. A Priest is one who offers gifts and sacrifices for their sins and for the sins of others (Hebrews 5:1-2).

Until Israel became God's **chosen people** and nation, The Priesthood was an **individual order**. God was now ready to **witness nationally** and **internationally**. The Levitical Priesthood was ordained since Israel sinned as "**a human priesthood**" not being faithful and righteous, but being told by The Letter of The Law what was **good** or **evil**. The Law was to be their **righteousness** (Deuteronomy 6:25). They, in their hearts and minds were still **carnal** (I Timothy 1:7-10). They could still be A Nation of Priests and Kings as God's **witnesses** by The Righteousness of The Law (Deuteronomy 6:25). Kings are those who have the power of judgment and Priests are "**the intercessors**" for their sins and others. A King/Priest was a **judge** and **mediator** for their sins and the sins of others. This was what King/Priests do. That is why Christ's true witnesses are to be King/Priests in The Millennium (Revelation 1:6). However, you can, also, be a Priest today. You are to be a living sacrifice, now, in your human lives (Romans 12:1). To be a testator to Christ's **will** or **testimony**, you must presently be A Nation of Priests. As **true witnesses**, with *Christ In You*, you also should be willing to sacrifice your lives for Jesus and God, Your Father. Then you are **true witnesses of the testimony of Jesus, The New Covenant**. You are to be just as He is. You are His **representation** of exactly as Jesus was when He was human.

With The Church of God and The Church in The Wilderness, you, with Jesus, certify and validate that **the testimony** of Jesus, **His**

“will,” *The New Covenant* is true. This, then, fulfills the very “will” of God “the testimony” of Jesus Christ. The “will” is certified and to be enforced now that it has been substantiated, according to the “will” by **three witnesses**. Now, the enforcement of this **testimony** ushers in The Kingdom of God. **The time of Christ’s “return” is imminent.**

The mystery of God, “*Christ In You,*” is accepted by the entire world as Jesus appears in the clouds from the east, with all “**the angels**” and His “**saints**” who are His true witnesses and the time of **the judgment** of this world is about to transpire. The seven last plagues are released upon all with “**the mark of the beast**” and Satan’s false system. **God’s two witnesses must be a shining light to the world.**

What Is Sickness?

The scientific medical field attests **all sicknesses** are attacks by outside influences like a virus or bacteria. All ailments, physical and mental, are caused by some physical hostile force to the body. This is partly true. Why is it your immune system can no longer defend itself against attack? The answer is your defense mechanism isn’t strong enough. But, why is the immune mechanism not able to be healthy enough to do the job? Medical science asserts you experience a breakdown of your hormonal balance or other physiological difficulties. The answer is usually drug therapy or some other physical answer since they assume the body functions totally on a physiological basis and nothing else.

Is Sickness Caused By Sin?

The Bible adds an additional causal factor for mental or physical illness. Jesus asserts some sicknesses are caused by sin. The

medics look upon this assertion as a myth. As usual, when one does not understand **biblical terminology**, just as scientists who say only medical knowledge is reality, they then document their own **biblical** ignorance.

Sin, by its **biblical definition**, is to “**miss the mark.**” What “**mark**” does sickness miss? Is it mental or physical? Biblically to be sick because of sin, carries **the meaning of less than whole.** Whether missing the mark “physiologically” or “mentally” it is still caused by sinning.

One can get sick because of a lack of vitamins or minerals, which the body needs for health. Scurvy, because of a lack of Vitamin C can inflict a condition of sickness. The body needs proper care and nutrition to last its normal life cycle or it dies. The body is in a constant state of decay and continually needs recycling to maintain health, both physical and mental.

Jesus said, “**Man shall not live by bread alone but by every Word of God**” (Matthew 4:4). Christ certifies human wellness requires proper eating habits and food for physical and mental health. In addition, He also asserts to have “**spiritual**” health, you must continue to feed yourselves by The Word of God.

Humanity, therefore, besides a **physiological breakdown** can also have a **spiritual breakdown** as well. In both cases, physical repair and growth must be maintained along with the “**spiritual.**”

Sick Spirit

You have found **the life energy**, which causes your human bodies to function, is of itself, either good or evil. This is called a **neutral state** of consciousness. It can be influenced by the pulls

of the flesh, to survive, or have a conscience, which motivates the heart to be a moral being. This is the condition of the natural man from the time of birth. If you continue to feed yourselves **spiritually** by God's "**word**" and care for yourselves physically, then **biblically** you are without sin and not **missing the mark** "**spiritually**" or "physically." Impairing your physical well-being or spiritual life leads to death physically and **spiritually**.

Since your human bodies ultimately die, your paramount concern should be your **continual spiritual growth** or *Christ In You* as critical goals for all Christians. You must continue to **spiritually grow**. Your **eternal life** is at stake, but also a responsibility to be true witnesses of Christ. Why? Jesus answers the question. Christ said, "**Let your loins be girded about, and your lights burning**" (Luke 12:35). Going further Jesus warned, no man lights a candle and hides it. Then He said, "**Take heed that the light has no dark in it.**" Concluding, Jesus declared, "**If thy whole body therefore be full of light, having no part dark, the whole shall be full of light, as when the bright shining of a candle doth give thee light**" (Luke 11:33-36). Why is it important to be an example or light to the world as **Christ's witness**? After Jesus **returns**, only those who keep growing in The Word of God with God's "**word**" manifesting itself in your life, then with The Return of Christ you will be accepted as The Bride of Christ (Luke 12:35-38).

Mark And The Seal

When you have *Christ In You* and are witnessing as God instructs, you will know of "**a truth**" you are a **Son of God**. You will receive your "**inheritance.**" God has **sealed** you with a genuine reality of Christ and God "in you." You will appear as a **bright light** on a hill and there will be no resemblance of those with **the mark of the beast**. Those with "**the mark of the beast**" will be

obvious to all because their very “**life**” and “**hearts desire**” will show in their foreheads and hands and will manifest “**the world of Satan.**”

It will, also, be obvious when **growing Christians** manifest Christ “**in them**” by doing “the works” that Jesus did. It is guaranteed at **the seventh trumpet**, you will meet Jesus in the clouds. Only then with “**spirit bodies**” can you be exactly like Him and God, Your Father. Then, and only then, you will know you’ve won “the race” in winning **eternal life.**

COMPETITION

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 4

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *COMPETITION*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

he True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple– Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christians Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

God's Image – Vol. XIV

Seeking God

God's Free Choice

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
GOD IS A MYSTERY	1
MARK OF THE BEAST	7
IN GOD'S IMAGE	13
IN SATAN'S IMAGE	19
SATAN'S WILL	25

PREFACE

The world throughout the ages has regarded “*competition*” as good for the world. After all it brings “*the best to the top*” or does it?

In the early years of sports, the name meant those performing the athletic event had to display a specific, better than average ability, or they could not participate in the activity.

Athletes in today’s worldwide environments become angry against their opponents to the point of stopping the event and starting to fight. The observing crowd have so much hate they disobey all decorum and fight the hated athletes, their fans and themselves.

Our books are completely free of charge as we do not accept any money. Comments and criticisms are welcomed. Please list any *scripture* we may have missed.

Three new CD’s are available for you to request. These CD’s are in PDF format which allows you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: God’s Puzzle Solved, Parts I, II, III, IV and V; CD #2: 29 Printed Books; CD #3: Articles on various subjects. We are sorry, to have found, some countries outside of the U.S. charge horrendous tariffs for these books. Perhaps CDs will be the answer.

Address: Art Mokarow, Box 1197, Montgomery, TX. 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Websites: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Download free books)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Christian Articles)

INTRODUCTION

Satan loves “*the game of competition*” but he knows he cannot win, or even compete with God. He can only do what God permits and Satan understands this only too well.

SATAN’S PURPOSE

The Devil was known as The Bright and Morning Star. He saw himself as *the savior* and being equal to God.

God said, when He created Satan, Satan was “*perfect*” in every way. He actually did not make any mistakes. The adversary knew what he was doing when he told Eve that she would not die from eating of the fruit of the trees in the garden. God knew that ultimately in spite of Eve eating of The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, He would need to have His First-born Son come to Save The World.

The Prophets, The Angels and The Apostle Peter knew a Promised Seed would come, but did not know who He would be or when He would come (I Peter 1). Satan thought, he would be “*the one*” sharing The Throne of God. He wanted to be equal to God.

That is the battle Christ had with Satan. Jesus revealed the difference between them. Christ lived by every Word of God, but Satan only chose the parts he wanted to listen to (Matthew 4:4). Christ by only doing what God told Him to do (by faith) was The True Bright and Morning Star (Revelation 22:16). Satan completely lost out and became The Devil. The battle in the wilderness with Satan was indeed very “*competi-*

tive.” Satan tried to replace Christ to become “*the champion savior*.” Satan’s goal was, “*I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the Most high* [equal with God].” Satan was ego driven and had the wrong motives. He wanted to be “*right*” rather than seeking The Righteousness of God.

Babylon is under Satan’s rule using “*human ego*” just like he thinks and follows. Satan’s “system of competition” is trying to make them equal to God.

Isaiah explains what happened to The King of Babylon (Isaiah 14:15-24). Babylon was destroyed by God and the king ended up in the grave and his carcass (like an animal) trodden down under everyone’s feet (Isaiah 14:19).

Here is God’s conclusion to all of Satan’s effort to be like God, “*The LORD of hosts [El Elyon] has sworn [an oath], saying, Surely as I have thought, so shall it come to pass; and as I have purposed [God’s Will], so shall it stand*” (Isaiah 14:24).

COMPETITIVE GOODNESS

“*Babylon*” means “*confusion*.” Everyone, at one time or another, wants to live forever and live in a perpetual Paradise. The Tower of Babel is a Tower at the top of a mountain which in Hebrew means “The Gateway to God’s Holy House.” The pathway circling up to God’s gateway leads an individual to the path which allows him/her to enter His Holy House. This “path” – this “way,” is *The Torah* consisting of five books of *The Bible*. The “Way” of God is His Righteousness to achieve the goal of having The Bride or a Guest

in The House of God. Any other way to enter would be a *sin* or *missing the mark* to be accepted in God's House. Any other way leads to death, because humans only end as dust. No one has an immortal soul. God can end an individual's soul (life) or body anytime He wants, but remember, He can, also, restore life (Matthew 10:28).

How does God destroy a soul? If God does not keep giving The Gift of Life to an individual – that person dies. The Gift of God is not a gift if you already have it. A gift is a present an individual gives, especially, when they do not have “*the power of life*” to bestow upon themselves. That is Life – Evermore in Paradise.

HUMAN PURPOSE

Why was man made from dust as a temporary *being*? That is the question. The goal of God is to make everyone, in a specific order, exactly in The Image of God (Genesis 1:26). *The Bible* describes how God will make everyone just like Him.

Just like The Muslims agree, *The Bible* is The Book of The People. God will make the whole world like Him. Why did God go to all that trouble? It is all about “*competition*,” a lesson mankind must learn before anyone can receive The Gift of Eternal Life in an unending Paradise.

To be in The Image of God is a Great Mystery. “*Christ – In You*” is that Mystery (Colossians 1:27). Christ is “*The Author*” – as “*The Word of God*.” Christ alone as God's Begotten First-born had to write The Book of Life to understand it (Hebrews 12:2). Without Christ's

***Book of Life*, no one would know what God wants you to do or what you will eventually become.**

SATAN'S COMPETITION

God gave free choice to Adam and Eve and they had no *Law* to keep or obey. Their “free choice” was their *Law* to choose either “*life*” or “*death*.” One would think the choice is simple.

One would believe everyone would pick “*eternity*” without any thought. Most humans have a “*weakness*” that only God understands. Satan proved he wanted to be right and, therefore, equal to God. Eve ate from The Tree of Life because she desired it. She chose to want what she thought God knew so she could be like God (just like Satan).

Adam knew better, but chose to die with Eve because of his great love for her. Adam really was not any better than Eve. She had his genes and she wanted to be equal with him. Most mothers would be willing to die for their children, because they came out of their body and are a part of them. Mankind, male and female are more alike than they realize. Adam came out of God's body and wanted to be like His Father. But both man and woman – “*missed the mark*.”

Satan's competitive desires are just like those of most men and women. Satan wants to be equal to God, just as most humans (who understand) would like to have the power of God and be able to live forever. Even Christ did not think it was “robbery” to be like God. Jesus was faithful according to The Will of God and did not have other gods before Him (Philemon 1:6-7).

Satan's competition is against The Will of God. You must learn to understand The Will of God and not "*the will of man.*"

CHAPTER 1

GOD IS A MYSTERY

The Mystery of God is to know The One True God. Mankind has not seen God or heard His Voice. God becomes a theophany, “God – In You” but appears as a Man.

“Christ – In You” solves The Mystery of God because His Son, as a human, lives by every Word of God. The Holy Spirit is The Word of God (Colossians 1:27).

GOD’S GLORY

Until you are no longer naked in The Resurrection and are clothed with The Glory of God, you are still exposed. You need to be completely clothed in The Glory of God which is all of God’s “goodness.” The Hope of Glory is what Paul wrote about. When you are dressed in God’s *goodness*, you will see and finally, know God because you will see Him as He actually is. Until then you cannot know Him. You will only truly know Him when you are as He is. That time will be when you are in “*The Image of God*” (I Corinthians 13:12).

You will know God, His “desires,” His “*will*” and how He thinks. You will also see Him as He is because everyone will be clothed in The Image of God. To truly

know someone, you need to be just like them in almost every way. Thus, to know God, you must be in His “*image*.”

GOD’S GIFTS

Many earthly fathers and grandparents cannot say “*no*” to their children and grandchildren. So likewise, God cannot deny you, as long as it does not cause you harm. Sometimes God allows you to have what is harmful even though He knows it will hurt you, if it is the only way you can learn – God allows an individual’s free choice. Remember the adage “Be careful what you wish for – you might get your wish.”

Knowing God can rectify all your sins, He allows you to suffer, but finally, brings you to reality like Job (Isaiah 45:9). God purposely stays hidden from mankind for their own good, “*Verily you are a God that hides yourself, O God of Israel, the Savior*” (Isaiah 45:15). God is doing The Works, through His Son who lives by every Word of God.

WORKS ARE GIFTS

All the technological inventions by individuals really come from God. God made man – the first homo sapiens (Adam and Eve). God put “*A spirit in man: and the inspiration of the Almighty gives them [man] understanding*” (Job 32:8). The gift of “human intelligence” is also God-given. The “*spirit*” God inspired in Adam made him the first homo sapien. Before there were just hominoids (walking upright) as homo erectus

(Romans 8:20). Man was just like any other animal. God's Holy Spirit was a "*free gift*" granted by God only to those who repent and want Christ's "*mind*" which is The Mind of God (Philemon 1).

Now for a surprise, "*Blessed be the God and Father of our Lord Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings [gifts] in heavenly places in Christ*" (Ephesians 1:3). All gifts, whether they be intellectual, physical, creative, talents or abilities comes from God.

You receive these gifts from God because, "*That their hearts [desires] might be comforted, being knit together in love, and to all riches of the full assurance of understanding [intellect], to the acknowledgement [together] of the mystery of God, and of the Father, and of Christ; In whom are hid all the treasures [valuables] of wisdom [know-how] and knowledge*" (Colossians 2:2-3). Do you grasp these words written by Paul? Christ as The Word of God, complete with The Gifts of God, is ready to bestow them on you. Paul acknowledges these gifts have come from God. This great happening is known as The Mystery of God. All *gifts* and *blessings* come from God.

God is The Mystery through "Christ – In You" because God has been seen by no one and no one has heard His voice. God is The Mystery who gives everything to mankind. It is what God has predestined before the creation – it is The Will of God.

God strives with the angels and mankind for your "*good.*" God is not ego-driven as most humans are or

Satan is, because John told you God consists of “True Love” (I John 4:16). Love is The Greatest Gift because it never fails – it is Eternal and you, too, can become Eternal. Christ through God’s Holy Spirit will give you gifts or talents (riches) when you deeply desire them and you ask God for them.

Human miracles and new inventions are given to you by God. Christ said, in John 5, that you cannot do anything through your own abilities. All talents, inventions and all benefits come from God. Composers of songs, athletes, business persons and heroes all are granted their gifts by God. Everyone is only a creature of God until He gives you “*a spirit*” to have understanding. Perfection, as a gift, is granted after you repent. You will receive God’s Holy Spirit like Christ. Wow!

God is the only “One” who can “*build all things,*” except Christ who has been “glorified” with “*The Goodness of God*” (Hebrews 3:4). *The Scriptures* are clear. Now, Christ is God sharing His Father’s Throne. Christians will also be crowned (I Peter 2:9).

GROWING IN GOD

***Spiritual gifts* are granted when you repent and finally seek to be like God in His “*image.*” To become “*One with God*” you need to discover everything you can about him.**

According to your “works” you will be rewarded. If you choose, in earnest, to be exactly like God – even-

tually you will be like Him. Whatever you achieve by prayer (depth of desire) and *spiritual growth* is done by God with His Holy Spirit.

“*Competition*” is a Satanic goal concerned only with one person – the self. Satan wants to be equal to God, but doing it his way – regardless if someone is harmed or not. It is like playing sports today, or in the Roman Colosseum – every man for himself.

It is the motive, one’s innermost feelings, to love themselves, or have The Love of God for others. The ultimate love was when Christ died for you.

Christ is The Messiah because He lived every Word of God – perfectly. Of His own volition, He chose to give His life even when God had forsaken Him. Jesus was all alone when His own Father left Him to die. Then Christ became The Savior when He lovingly died for everyone’s sins by His own free choice. He had the “*faith*” to honor God, knowing God would resurrect Him in a glorified state and He would be just as God is.

CHAPTER 2

MARK OF THE BEAST

God initially created you like any creature, such as an animal or a beast. It is all predicated on free choice. Throughout *The Bible*, you are compared to a lamb, ox, goat, a ferocious lion, bear or leopard. You are free to choose which ever you share traits with, depending upon what is the most important to you.

EVIL TO GOOD

Adam and Eve chose to become like God through their own abilities. Adam loved Eve so much he knowingly chose to die with her. Although they both knew God would send a promised seed, genealogically, to save mankind Adam decided to take the hard road or path to The House of God.

The history of the world's people proves *Scriptures* to be true through Christ. *The Bible* is that story of how God makes man in The Image of God.

Peter said, God does not discriminate but has the same standards for everyone. Because God is indifferent, He sets His judgment based upon *repentance* (Acts 10:35). Genealogically, Israel needed more time to learn to become Sons of God.

When an individual has a change of heart and seeks God and His righteousness, sin will no longer be the hindrance. God is always merciful and forgiving through Christ. This is *The Everlasting Covenant* stated in Isaiah 55.

Choice is *the cardinal key*. God knows, until you have a repentant heart, He cannot teach you *the truth* and you do not have the ability to learn *the truth*.

You are free to be “*a lamb*” like Jesus or the opposite – a ferocious beast. “A mark” or a “seal” are sometimes indistinguishable. A seal locks something in a place of safety or security. A mark on someone is visible to all.

“*A mark*” placed upon “*a seal*” tells what is being secured. If “*the mark*” is imprinted you know and understand what is safely sealed. If you act like a lamb, then you know this animal is pleasant to deal with. If “*the mark*” is like a wild animal, untrainable as a poisonous snake, lion, bear or leopard – beware my friend. The most violent is a combination of a lion, bear and leopard as “one beast.” It represents The Mark of The Beast “666” – three beasts in one.

Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon was labelled a lion by God. Nebuchadnezzar was also the head of gold (which God shows of value). Nebuchadnezzar respected Judah, The People of God and even chose a wise man like Daniel on his cabinet as one of his personal advisers.

Over the years, The King of Babylon thought he was

like God and it was driving him crazy. He lost his human intelligence and understanding. He desired to be right, so intensely, God left him on his own. Read Daniel 4 for details.

Even though God did not make him psychotic, The King always thought he was right – trusting no one and became like a violent beast, destroying everyone. Everyone with The Mark of The Beast is sealed with who and what they are. Terrorists like Nero, Napoleon and Hitler are all good examples because they all had The Mark of The Beast.

DEMONS

Are demons for real? Yes they are. Do demons jump into a person's mind and take over that person? No! Satan does not dwell in anyone. It is The Spirit which dwells "In You" as a lamb, goat, lion, or the animal you represent. There would not be enough Satans or fallen angels to be in so many individuals. If you decide to be like The Spirit of Satan – it is your choice.

"Christ – In You" does not mean He, as a being, dwells physically in you.

Spirits are not God, but are living entities from God. "Christ – In You" reveals the power and Holy Spirit of God, His love and sound mind leads you to be what you choose to be. Without His Holy Spirit you are merely humans who have "The Spirit – In Man" which consists of "*human understanding.*" You either have abilities given to you as blessings, or you have

nothing. When you are without God, you are left to yourself. The choice is always yours and it depends on what is most important to you. Christ told you the same thing, *“When the unclean spirit is gone out of a man, he [spirit] walks through dry places, seeking rest; and finding none, he said, I will return to my house [human] whence I came out. And when he comes, he finds it swept and garnished. Then goes he, and takes to him seven other spirits more wicked than himself; and they enter in, and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first”* (Luke 11:24-26). Which way have you chosen?

It is all a state of having free choice. To summarize: Spirits are powers from God with *“a life”* within them. The degree or power of *“a spirit”* is the ability to influence.

Angels are *“spirits”* who have powers while humans do not. Angels have free choice like humans and therefore will be judged by their works by The Sons of God (I Corinthians 6:37). The question then becomes: Do the angels help or hinder humans? *“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature [creation]: old things [animal] are passed away; behold, all things are become new [different]. And all things are of God, who has reconciled us to himself [restored] by Jesus Christ [Matthew 18:1] and has given to us the ministry of reconciliation [restoration]”* (II Corinthians 5:17-18).

Christ, the human, could never have been *“In You.”* He sits in heaven sharing The Throne of God. How are you *“In Christ?”* It is relatively simple – humans

have the same Holy Spirit that is “In Christ.” The Holy Spirit of God never can possess you – it merely reveals His Truth, The Word of God (John 17:17). Nothing possesses you or your mind; it merely discloses “*the truth*” to you, to see by “*inspiration*” what you did not understand, because you were *blinded* to “*the truth*” by your own choice. Your mind can be opened to see what you refused to see before.

People blind themselves by having the desires of a wrong heart. Individuals have idols, especially when they think of themselves all the time, as Job did. Satan could not jump inside of Job. He could only do what God allowed. Satan can never control your mind. You always have the liberty of free choice to decide who, or what, you decide to follow.

Your natural instinct when you are in danger is to run away to seek safety and peace. Survival is issue number one within the human nature. The choice is always of your own doing. You can never be possessed. God uses Satan to prove he is not as smart as he thinks, but is a fool like the rest of humans until he and others decide to seek God and His ways.

Demons do not jump inside of a body. If you are not influenced by anything, your minds can become a vacuum like an animal. Then, you may be left to what type of animal you imitate. With nothing in your mind it is like a prison, a swept vacuum waiting to be occupied.

If you choose to follow Satan’s thinking and his fellow angels, ultimately, you become a wild animal not

trusting anything, but looking for safety and peace in any form, no matter where it is.

Demons do not possess anyone, but can influence you just as you may trust an individual and may put too much faith in them. They may become your Saviors. Satan's influence is all over the place. Following Satan or his fellow devils leads to destruction, finding yourself in outer darkness which has no light and you cannot learn anything. It is like sitting in prison with nothing to do, or accomplish, except think. By demonic influence you end with total "*nothingness*."

Nebuchadnezzar is your *Biblical* example of The Mark of The Beast, who acted as a combination of a lion, bear and leopard, until he repented and was restored to kingship.

To learn The Way of God, you must become like sheep willing to do no harm to any other human being or to Christ, God or His creations. You are to love God and all His creation, presently it is "*the universe*," but there is much more to come.

"*Love*" – "*completes*" and "*fulfills*" all *Laws* which is God with His Son as First-born. You are to become exactly like them both, The Alpha and The Omega.

CHAPTER 3

IN GOD'S IMAGE

Biblically, God is whatever He chooses to be which is why there is no end to The Kingdom of God. God is “*the kingdom*” which never will be completed. How can God be eternally creating? Compared to God – humans know so little.

GOD IN ALL

God will be “All In All” when everyone is in The Image of God. No one, however, can be “*all God is*” for only God is “*The Supreme Being*” who has the power to do all “the works” necessary for all the plans He has. All the physical universe reveals The Invisible God (Romans 1). The universe is continually growing. God is the only one who never changes, but mankind changes every year and ultimately dies. You are only a part of God’s “*being*.” God is still creating you in His “*image*” when you make the free choice to follow Him. The Body of Christ and The Word of God is “*the totality of God*.” What the future will be like, no one truly knows, except for the rare glimpses that He allows you to read in *The Bible*.

HOW GOD COMPETES

In The Kingdom of God there will be no human competition. No one will try in any way or even be motivated to be better than others. Outdoing others will

no longer exist. The reason everyone has talents and abilities, is so that we will all fit perfectly into a world of great accomplishment and be proud of each others work.

Real charity, which is The Love of God, steps in whenever needed and gives aid to improve others. Forced, dictated love by government is over and no longer enforced. One way to stimulate greed is to steal from another under the guise of fairness, or justice, which builds resentment and is the opposite of looking out for the other.

The Book of Revelation under The New Heavens and on The New Earth sets the basis for all charity, “*And the gates of it shall not be shut at all by day: for there shall be no night [darkness – deceit] there. And they shall bring the glory [all God’s Goodness] and honour [Godly respect] of the nations into it*” (Revelation 21:25-26). Your God is not only a great God, but too wonderful for words.

The New Earth will be so prosperous and fruitful, The Gifts (charity) will continually pour into New Jerusalem. Why? Everyone in The Kingdom of God will be receiving so much from The Chief Servant (God), that instead of taking from its citizens, everyone’s cup will be overflowing.

Visiting the owners in a new home, a guest brings a gift. Usually, the home owners entertain the guests for dinner, a form of The Wedding Feast. Gifts were brought because the home owners were contributors

to the community. This was a “truth” known from the beginning of time.

The Will of God gives “the most” to everyone, not just those who do not steal (by force), nor governments who keep raising taxes and tariffs. God produces from His work more than everyone put together. He is truly God Almighty. No one can outdo or produce more than God. God by nature must “give” because He is consumed with a love most humans cannot fathom or even understand. The competition God is interested in is to only out do Himself for everyone’s good.

THE GREATEST CHARITY

The Love of God is much greater than anyone can imagine and His love and charity spills over to the entire world, “*And he shewed me a pure river of water [to all nations] of life [eternal prosperity], clear as crystal [complete transparency], proceeding out of the throne of God and of the Lamb [Christ]. In the midst of the street of it, and on either side of the river, was there the tree of life [eternal prosperity], which bare twelve manner of fruits, and yielded her fruit every month: and the leaves of the tree were for the healing [restoration of Paradise] of the nations [the world]*” (Revelation 22:1-3). Do you grasp The Love of God and His charity? God and Christ are so productive, it spills over to all nations and restores them to eternal prosperity. This charity is for all their individual needs and *spiritual* growth. Wow!

What a difference from Satan and this present world

which he rules, “*And I saw no temple therein [New Jerusalem]: for the Lord God Almighty and the Lamb [Christ] are the temple of it*” (Revelation 21:22).

The Temple is God’s Holy House. This House of God is so large, it spreads 1500 miles in every direction. The Temple is so enormous, it has courts for the Israelites and Gentiles, so they can visit this “house” in all their glory.

These gifts are the best that nations of the world could bring. Their gifts came from their hearts and deep-seated desire to manifest their honor and respect for such a loving and giving God. Wow!

COMPETITION GOD’S WAY

Competition is only “good” when it comes from giving and from what is produced by one’s work. A gift, personally made by “the giver” is the best gift of all. When the gift is the best made, like Eternity, it is the “best gift” anyone has ever given. “God is The Only One” and no one comes close to Him, “Remember the former things of old: for I am God, and there is none else; I am God, and there is none like me. Declaring the end from the beginning, and from ancient times the things that are not yet done, saying, My counsel shall stand, and I will do all my pleasure” (Isaiah 46:9-10). Read it again.

The world knew from the beginning, that God will make man in His Image (Genesis 1:26). He is the *Only One* who can perform His “will” and “pleasure.” Af-

ter His counsel from His heavenly host of angels, God will stand to do what He “*purposed*” and “*willed*” from the beginning. Although, when conditions change – He modifies or changes to perfect any and all of His “*plans.*” It gives Him great pleasure, because God cannot stop giving, just look around you at this wondrous world.

God’s “*will*” is to do more than anyone else. He creates man in The Image of God, so they have the abilities God does. The Will of God is not to compete against others, but to make each to be as good as they can be.

Being Sons of God is not to be more or better, than God (which is impossible) but to be “equal with Him.” You cannot be perfect, so it is foolish to think in that direction. Satan always wanted to compete to be like God, which is impossible, ignorant and foolish on Satan’s part.

To feel you are “so right” as Job did, is total nonsense (makes no sense). God must do “*the work*” to make you like Him and as He said, “*No one else can.*” His counsel and hearing everyone’s point of view, concludes that only God can make everyone in His “*image.*” Competition in God’s way is to not outdo others and beat them, but to let God do His “*will.*” For you, “*in faith,*” are to live by every Word of God as Christ told Satan.

Competition is simple to grasp, so you must stop trying to be like *the greedy individuals of the world.* “*Human nature*” causes “*competition*” trying to outwit others.

That is a form of evilness, causing nothing but harm and always ends in destruction and death. You have an opportunity to make “the right choices” in your short, momentary lifespan.

CHAPTER 4

IN SATAN'S IMAGE

When Satan told Eve to eat of any Tree in The Garden, including The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil, he was right. Satan knew all The Trees in The Garden would make everyone in God's *image*. He told Eve what God knew (Genesis 3:5). God knew you had two ways to come to Him. You could come either by way of The Tree of Life or human nature's way over generations, until mankind realized life does not work without God. Mankind needs God, but needs to seek God and repent.

Eve ate from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil because she desired it. This tree was the painful way, which led to death. Satan knew God's "*will*" was to make man in His "*image*."

"And God said, "*Let us* [the entire heavenly host of angels] *make man in our image* [and complete God's purpose and will]" (Genesis 1:26). God as "El Elyon," – "*God of Hosts*" has a counsel with which He discusses His plans (Isaiah 46). Satan, as a cherub angel, heard God say so. He did not lie directly to Eve, but rather deceived her with a lack of honesty by speaking in transparency.

TREE OF GOOD AND EVIL

What is The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil? Christ said in Matthew 7, that you shall know them by their fruits. The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil is a mixture of truth corrupted by evil which causes much harm. Eating of that tree causes harm to the whole world and this tree does have good in it, but also evil. It produces a mixture which is “Babylon,” that makes society “*uncertain*” and causes great stress for everyone.

Satan, who is not God or His Son, does not have The Word of God and, therefore, is not the one to believe or follow.

Satan is The Father of Lies because he is not God, but only a servant like all angels, “*You are of your father the devil and the lusts [strong desires] of your father you will do*” (John 8:44). That is “human competition.” Christ just defined “human competition” as Satan, as their father. Satan’s competition is to outdo others by deception with no morality or honesty. He is The Father of Lies which began with Eve, once he lied to her through deception.

Satan had no intention for Eve to know the difference between *good* and *evil*. By mixing some good with evil, a person loses the ability to recognize what is good or evil. It is that simple. When you are as God, then, you will be able to decipher “*good*” from “*evil*.” Until God gives you His “*goodness*” and His “*glory*,” you cannot know the difference.

Satan leads you to think that you can decide between “good” or “evil.” Human competition leads to death because Satan cannot give Eternal Life. Satan already is “a spirit” and will exist forever. Until Satan becomes “repentant” and “grows spiritually,” in his heart and mind, Satan will remain in eternal torment, which is “outer darkness.” It is short of being in “nothingness.”

Satan will be thrown into The Lake of Fire, but his spirit will be in Tartaroo (eternal torment), “*And through covetousness [self desire] shall they with feigned [deceitful] words make merchandise [profit] of you [Christians]: whose judgment [trial] now of a long time [beginning] lingers not [trial put off] and their damnation [being guilty] slumbers [asleep – put off] not. For if God spared not the angels that sinned [left their habitation, job Jude 6], but cast them down [earth] to hell [Tartaroo – darkness] and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved for judgement [Lake of Fire]*” (II Peter 2:3-4).

Satanic competition lures you, by deception, getting you to buy into “the same thinking.” Those in Tartaroo are in an everlasting darkness, not knowing what is good or what is evil. They just exist as spirits in Satan’s hell (outer darkness in torment eternally) until they repent.

Jude describes this outer darkness, comparing them to wandering stars of space, “*Raging waves of the sea, foaming [pouring out] out their own shame [naked]; wandering stars [like angels], to whom is reserved the*

blackness of darkness [a dark dungeon] *for ever* [ages]" (Jude 13). Then Enoch prophesied of The Messiah's coming to judge those competing, not for the good of others, but themselves. They are *the anti-Christ* with The Mark of The Beast. But, God always has a way for those in Babylon to come out of her (present Jerusalem) and eventually, be saved (Jude 14 - 20).

Even those not devoting their lives to Christ during The Tribulation will be saved from The Lake of Fire (Revelation 7:14). They will be regarded as "The Two Witnesses" of God, by dying for Him. The 144,000 of The Twelve Tribes of Israel and the innumerable multitude of Gentiles are martyred and resurrected like Christ in three days, "*Keep yourselves in the love of God* [willing to die], *looking for the mercy* [forgiveness] *of our Lord Jesus Christ until eternal life. And of some* [in Babylon] *have compassion* [mercy], *making a difference. And others save with fear* [Lake of Fire], *pulling them out of the fire* [while burning]; *hating even the garment* [spirit] *spotted by the flesh*" (Jude 21-23).

In Matthew 19, The rich man and Lazarus had all worldly riches. The rich man's God was "*mammon*" and he was not willing to become "*perfect*" like Christ, who was sinless. Christ said, worldly riches turns a person to greed and "*the love of money is the root of all evil*" (I Timothy 6:6-11).

The world loves "competition" because of self-interest. Survival of the fittest (human competition) is the preservation of "*the self*" above all else. Satan wants to be just like God, but he wants to do "things" his

way, and not The Way of God.

Jesus warned those worshipping themselves as “a god” will not be able to save themselves. Christ clearly told you, “*With men* [human effort] *this is impossible; but with God all things are possible*” (Matthew 19:26).

With God, even those in The Lake of Fire can be saved when they repent. The parable of Lazarus and the rich man follows the account of The Lost Son. He wasted his inheritance and was considered dead, but repented and then was restored when his father prepared a feast (Luke 15).

The love of money, profit for self, cannot be trusted with real riches in Eternity (Luke 16:11). Lazarus and the rich man proves that when in the fire, the rich man was worried about his brothers and not himself. He knew he was wrong and thought of his family, thus he had repented.

Jesus warned to use “riches” for the right purpose (Luke 16:9). Using “riches” to survive and help others in need is the proper use. Governments forcing people to pay money that they have not earned, is evil. It allows individuals and governments to steal from others without their approval. Charity must be from “*a right heart*” without any coercion. Anything else is sin and not out of love.

The Lazarus “parable” reveals, repentance can occur even in The Lake of Fire. Read the entire lesson Christ spoke about on the rich man. This lesson cov-

ers The Pharisees who are seeking God, on a pretence for their livelihood, and not because they have “*a right heart*” nor want to follow Him.

The rich man with his flesh burned and destroyed – repented in *his spiritual body*, as the angels have. Re-read Luke 16:23-31, which tells of those like the rich man (now like the angels) are “*spirits*” who repented in The Lake of Fire.

The “*potential for salvation*” continues, even with Satan who is “*a spirit*” while in “*outer darkness*” and must stay in torment. There will be gnashing of teeth until they are healed with the healing waters from the leaves of The Tree of Life.

Competition for self-benefit, is “*self worship*,” because in your heart, you can desire to be “*a god*,” as Satan wanted to be equal to God. *Scripture* explains the result of those thrown into The Lake of Fire. (Request the free book, *Lake of Fire – The Judgment*).

To be in Satan’s “*image*” is to be under The Mark of The Beast. You are ready to understand The End Days of The Gentiles (without God), plus the part Satan and his demonic angels play in that time period.

CHAPTER 5

SATAN'S WILL

The Fourth Beast described in Daniel 7 covers “the entire history of the world.” The Fourth Beast is the worst, when Christianity and Paganism unite as the “Image of The Fourth Beast” until The End of Days, which is human rule.

IRON AND CLAY

“*Human competition*” being “*self serving*” in their heart, unite as a one-world government. They believe they can solve their own survival needs by human science. What foolishness, since only God knows “*good*” and “*evil*.” At the End of Days, Satan, The Beast Prophet and The Beast have “*spirits of devils*,” working miracles, (science) going forth to the kings (world rulers) of the whole world and this continues to The Battle of Armageddon (Revelation. 16:13-14). What is it that creates such hatred and violence.

The King of Babylon, Nebuchadnezzar, had a dream from God. There were no wise men in his cabinet that could interpret the dream. Daniel, a Prophet of God, was able to interpret Nebuchadnezzar's dream.

Daniel explained to the king, the world would have four major kingdoms before Christ would come and

establish The Eternal Kingdom of God. These kingdoms began with Nebuchadnezzar, The King of Babylon, followed by Medo-Persia, Graeco-Macedonia and Rome (Daniel 2).

All these kingdoms, with The Eighth Image of The Beast being these *“four kingdoms,”* would last until The Messiah came. They had one characteristic in common (Revelation 13:11-15), *“You, O king, saw, and behold a great image. This great image, whose brightness was excellent, stood before you; and the form thereof was terrible. This image’s head was of fine gold, his breast and his arms of silver, his belly and his thighs of brass. His legs [military] of iron, his feet [ten toes] part of iron [military] and part of clay [human ten kings]”* (Daniel 2:31-33).

This beast and its *“image”* lasts until Christ destroys them and The Kingdom of God rules forever, *“You saw till that a stone [Christ] was cut out without hands, which smote the image upon his feet [military] that were of iron and clay, and brake them to pieces”* (Daniel 2:34). The iron refers to military weapons and war. Iron was the strongest metal for weapons in Nebuchadnezzar’s day. The feet make the whole body alive and must be mobile to be active. The feet support the whole body to walk, work and exist which feeds the needs of the world.

The Book of Revelation answers the question who are the toes who make the beast a success, *“And the ten horns [governments] which you saw are ten kings, which have received no kingdom [future] as yet; but re-*

ceive power as kings [rulers] *one hour* [short time] *with the beast*" (Revelation 17:12). This "beast" in The End of Time becomes the world rulers and the toes like iron, are militarily mixed with common clay and have no real power. What is behind this final Mark of The Beast's power?

THE GOD MAMMON

"For all nations have drunk [drugged] *of the wine of the wrath of her fornication,* [confusion] *and the kings of the earth have committed fornication with her, and the merchants of the earth are waxed rich* [politically] *through the abundance of her delicacies* [luxuries]" (Revelation 18:3). *The Bible* definition of The Mark of the Beast is the "god mammon." Christ, consistently, warned His people, through the teaching of Lazarus, the lost son, and the rich man, that only God can save people who have The Mark of The Beast.

Jesus commands you to come out of Babylon (Revelation 18:4). This happens after you have read what The Mark of The Beast really is and because of mankind relying upon "mammon" riches, as your saviors. The anti-Christ is given power as "the human head" of The Beast by worldwide riches.

What is the root cause of Babylon? Right after the angel proclaims, *"Babylon the great is fallen, is fallen, and is become the habitation of devils,* [demons] *and the hold of every foul spirit,* [Satan and his angels] *and a cage* [prison] *of every unclean and hateful bird* [Mark of The Beast]" (Revelation 18:2). Are you ready to find

out why The Wrath of God is poured out on The Beast and The Whore? This is at Armageddon, when all nations gather to attack the great Babylon. Jerusalem, as The Whore represented Egypt, Sodom and are ready to be destroyed, “*And the light of a candle [to see – life] shall shine no more at all in you; and the voice of the bridegroom and the bride shall be heard no more [Christ and his bride] at all in you: for your merchants [commerce] were the great men [rulers] of the earth [world]; for by your sorceries [deceits] were all nations [world] deceived. And in her was found the blood of prophets, and of saints, and of all that were slain upon the earth*” (Revelation 18:23-24). The real “*god of this world*” is “*the love of money*” as the god-mammon (the riches of the world). Those super wealthy are the world’s real rulers as the great men of the earth. Even the ten world rulers under the anti-Christ are subject to the wealthiest families on the earth just before The Messiah returns.

When The Beast realizes that Babylon causes drunkenness or confusion, is Jerusalem, then The Beast turns upon her (both Muslims and The Gentiles). The question, as always, becomes who will rule Jerusalem – “*the last Babylon?*” All world wars and upheavals are about Jerusalem. (Request the free book, *What Is Babylon*).

THE HEART OF THE BEAST

God judges everyone’s hearts, which are where mankind’s real desires are. What makes a person drunk and lose their common sense? When you get drugged

by alcohol you can no longer think straight. *The Bible* describes who your enemy is and how this enemy makes you drunk. You can no longer separate facts from fiction, which is *good* and *evil*, “*Through desire* [our hearts] *a man* [humanity] *having separated* [lost] *himself*, [intelligence] *seeks* [driven to] *and intermeddles with all wisdom*” (Proverbs 18:1). Pretty clear.

Your “*desires*” can “*confuse your intelligence*” when you refuse to be open minded to seek all facts and rationally make a true decision. You are in a state of drunkenness with your false desires. Proverbs 18:1-7 describes a false god which you desire first, who brings you over the facts, ultimately, to death. *The world’s “god”* is self desire to exist – survival of the fittest.

That is Satan’s “*will*” (desire) and mankind has been duped, as well. Both are in harmony and both chose to be equal with God. They want to be right, rather than seek God and His “*righteousness*,” that is human competition. It could not be simpler. God should be The One teaching competition and not Satan. God’s competition is to better oneself to be like God and His righteousness. That is The Will of God to make you in His “*Image*.”

Satan with his fellow devils want to be equal to God. They want to compete to be the best over all others. Riches, they believe are the answer, whereas God announces it is “*The root of all evil*.”

God is giving. Satan and his fallen angels are liars and thieves that steal the property of others and of

God as well. Satan's competition is Babylon and diametrically the opposite to God.

VISIONS, DREAMS AND FRIENDS

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 5

By

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *VISIONS, DREAMS AND FRIENDS*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple – Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christians Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

God's Image – Vol. XIV

Seeking God

God's Free Choice

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
DAY OF PENTECOST	1
GOD'S FRIENDS	7
FALSE FRIENDS	13
GOD'S WORD	19
ETERNAL GIFT OF GOD	27

PREFACE

Jesus said, “*You are my friends, if you do whatsoever I command you. Henceforth I call you not servants [slaves]; for the servant knows not what his lord [master] does: but I have called you friends; for all things that I have heard of my Father I have made known to you*” (John 15:14-15). Amazing.

Jesus told everything God had informed Him to His Disciples, “*This is my commandment, that you love one another, as I have loved you*” (John 15:12). It is the love one has for the other that defines friendship and trust which is faith.

This book is entirely free and no money is accepted. Use your funds to aid the orphans, widows and those who are truly poor or helpless. Comments and criticisms are appreciated. Please list any scriptures we may have overlooked.

There are, now, three new CDs. They are in PDF format, which allows you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: God’s Puzzle Solved, Part I, II, III, IV and V; CD #2: 29 Other Books; CD #3: Articles on various subjects.

We are sorry if countries outside of the U.S. charge horrendous tariffs for packages containing these books. Perhaps requesting CDs will be the answer.

Address: Art Mokarow, Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Website: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Books)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Articles)

INTRODUCTION

Visions, Dreams And Friends is a rather unusual name for a book. It sounds prophetic and social as well. These three names, dreams, visions, and friends all tie together, as one – *Biblically*.

Christ made an announcement as to who would be considered part of His family, “*For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother, and sister and mother*” (Matthew 12:50). Quite a statement.

Jesus regarded those of His personal family less than those who seek His Father’s “will.” Peter, The Apostle, knew this, “*But in every nation he that fears him, and works righteousness [God’s Will] is accepted with him*” (Acts 10:35).

Family and friends, are not necessarily, true friends, “*Think not that I am come to send peace on earth: I came not to send peace, but a sword [terrorists]*” (Matthew 10:34).

The sword meant they were “*terrorists*” called The Sicarii. Human nature at its worst is like the wild animals, a lion, bear, and leopard combined. This is The Mark of The Beast in Revelation 13.

Some friends are false, some family members themselves quarrel, constantly, including fathers, mothers, daughters and at times daughter-in-laws against mother-in-laws (Matthew 10:34-35). Finding a true trusting friend is no easy task. God has a system, a definite method to determine who His friends are – be-

yond family members of His own household. “Prophecy” enters into God’s choice of “*a friend*.” He is very careful and determined to have loyal, trusting, faithful people. There cannot be any doubt.

God reveals His purposes and plans little by little like a small baby just beginning to learn, “*Whom shall he teach knowledge? [facts] and whom shall he make to understand doctrine? them that are weaned from the milk [nourished] and drawn from the breasts. For precept [idea] must be upon precept, [idea] precept upon precept; line [sentence] upon line [sentence], line upon line; here a little, and there a little*” (Isaiah 28:9-10).

God tests mankind with parts of His goals and dreams to see how faithful and true a person reacts to His “*truths*.” Each human has a different pace and maturity. Every human is personally and individually tested to prove their friendship. You are ready to digest the methods God uses with you on a person-to-person basis.

CHAPTER 1

DAY OF PENTECOST

After forty days Christ went to be with His Father in heaven. One hundred and twenty followers of Christ came together on The Day of Pentecost with The Twelve Apostles. What took place was Christ's Gift of God's Holy Spirit of Truth for His chosen Disciples to begin learning The Mystery of God.

DREAMS AND VISIONS

On Pentecost, a mighty rushing wind (energy) filled the house in which His Disciples were sitting. Fiery tongues (languages) sat upon each of them. This wind of energy was the power of God's Holy Spirit upon them as Christ foretold (John 14:25-26).

The reason "The Gift of Tongues" sat over them was because of The Jews, devout men, from every nation (Acts 2:5). They were all speaking the languages of the nations they came from.

Peter stood up in their midst and made a remarkable statement. He quoted The Prophet, Joel, "*And it shall come to pass in the last days, said God, I will pour out of my spirit upon all flesh [the world]; and your sons and your daughters shall prophesy, and your young men shall see visions* [Paul, Peter, James, John – Matthew 17]

and your old men [Simeon – Anna Luke 2] *shall dream dreams*” (Acts 2:17 and Joel 2:29-30).

When Christ is there, God will make Israel’s young men and daughters to see visions and the old men to dream dreams (Joel 2:28-29). This would be in The Last Days, when God will be there to pour out His Holy Spirit upon all men – the world.

This was quite a prophecy, but were those The Last Days? Yes! “*God, who at sundry* [various] *times and in divers* [dreams – visions, etc.] *manners spoke in time past to the fathers by the prophets, Has in these last days spoken to us by his Son, whom he has appointed heir of all things* [Holy Spirit], *by whom also he made the worlds*” (Hebrews 1:1-2). Christ’s days on earth were The Last Days. How can that be?

LAST DAYS

In Matthew 24, Luke 21 and Mark 13, Christ relates all the world events to transpire until He returns. Christ clearly states when He will return, “*Verily I say to you, this generation shall not pass away till all be fulfilled*” (Luke 21:23). There it is. Christ was to come or return before His generation (40 years) concluded. Wow! The Last Days as Hebrews states is the truth.

Christ was to return with all those events completed within forty years. He was 30 years old when He was baptized by John, The Baptist and 40 years later – about 70 A.D. The Temple was destroyed.

Christ was to return to rebuild The Temple in three days after He was crucified. Christ predicted three days after The Temple was destroyed, He would rebuild it, but He did not.

Jesus did not return in that generation, but He did three days after His death to rebuild a *Spiritual Temple*. This was The Church of God comprised of True Christians by God's Holy Spirit (I Corinthians 3:16). These were The Last Days.

Just before Christ was captured and tried, this was His warning to His Disciples, “*Yet a little while is the light [Christ] with you. Walk while you have the light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walks in darkness knows not whither he goes. While you have light, believe in the light, that you may be the children of light*” (John 12:35-36).

Not only was Christ to return in that generation, but also these were The Last Days of Light, The Truth of God's Word. Without a doubt these were The Last Days.

Peter on Pentecost, foretold the prophecy that young men and women would have visions while old men and women dream dreams. Simeon, an old man, was shown “The True Christ” before he died, as God revealed it to Him, “*Lord, now let you your servant depart in peace, according to your word. For mine eyes have seen your salvation [Messiah], which you have prepared before the face of all people, A light [truth] to lighten the Gentiles, and the glory of your people Israel*” (Luke

2:29-32). Christ was “*the last light*” of those last days of “*the truth.*”

Anna was a prophetess, “The daughter of Phanuel, of the tribe of Aser: she was of a great age, and had lived with an husband seven years from her virginity; And she was a widow of about fourscore [80] and four years, which departed not from the temple, but served God with fastings and prayers night and day” (Luke 2:36-37).

Both were elderly and knew Christ at His birth as Prophets. Truly, as Peter said, these were The Last Days and the young and the old would see visions and dreams. Peter, James and John, as young men, saw a vision of Christ on His throne with Elijah and Moses – one on His right and one on His left (Matthew 17).

At that time, Simeon and Anna were the only ones to prophecy only Christ’s birth. Prophets only know “*in part*” just as all mankind only knows “*in part.*” Prophets are specific people with defined missions for limited goals during diverse times according to the needs of God’s people at a particular time.

God gives dreams and visions not only to His chosen people, but to Gentiles who God is using for the good of His people. Nebuchadnezzar, King of Babylon, had many God-given dreams because God was using him for the good of The Jews. Even Pilate’s wife was warned in a dream, to have her husband leave Christ alone because of God’s warning.

Dreams and visions are given to many when God uses

Gentiles or some of His people for specific purposes. Einstein claimed, he had been given a dream concerning his energy formula, $E=MC^2$. God grants many in world affairs to have dreams, or visions from Him. In great worldwide events, God can and will intervene, for some worldly purpose of His. Einstein said, all he wanted to know were God's thoughts because he felt the rest are details. Having dreams or visions are not always positive but also can be a lesson that causes harm, *"I am the Lord, and there is none else [one God], there is no God beside me: I girded you, though you have not known me: That they may know from the rising of the sun, and from the west, that there is none beside me. I am the Lord, and there is none else. I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace, and create evil: [harm] I the Lord [JHWH] do all these things"* (Isaiah 45:5-7).

God causes harm to a person like a father punishing a child to teach a lesson and keep the child from harm. Hebrews 12 details God's reason for pain and harm in regards to mankind. Physical fathers correct their children for their own benefit. Not God – He has no ego and only corrects, or gives a penalty so an individual learns for their good.

After God allows pain and suffering, He does stop once you learn. When you learn the lesson, you have peace and no longer hurt but are grateful for the lesson. Dreams and visions have many purposes from God – some good, some bad. How does one know?

CHAPTER 2

GOD'S FRIENDS

Friends are more than compatible. Friendship is predicated upon trust and truth with similar goals. “Compatibility” – “to get along” is mostly based upon pleasure and fun having a good time when together. Friendship is far beyond being compatible with similar likes and dislikes. The anchor you need is “*absolute faith*” in each other, which is true and real friendship.

GOD'S PROPHETS

Most believe God chooses Prophets because of their goodness which is true but much more is involved. Daniel, God's Prophet, was chosen by God for a very good reason.

Daniel, a Jewish captive, because of his wisdom to interpret dreams was selected by the king as his counseling cabinet. This king divided his kingdom under the rule of 120 princes to be over these provinces.

The king chose three, Daniel being one, to rule over the princes and The 120 Provinces. In fact, because of Daniel's great gift from God, the king set Daniel over the whole realm (Daniel 6:1-3). How and why did God select Daniel to be a Prophet with such wisdom?

The Prophet Daniel had visions and dreams, “*In the first year of Belshazzar king of Babylon Daniel had a dream and visions of his head [mind] upon his bed: then he wrote the dream and told the sum of the matters*” (Daniel 7:1).

Besides Daniel, Shadrach, Meshack and Abednego were also chosen as “elder wise men.” Notice who gave these four their superior gifts, “*As for these four children, God gave them knowledge and skill in learning and wisdom: and Daniel had understanding in all visions and dreams*” (Daniel 2:17). Wow!

In fact, the king found these four men ten times better than all the magicians and astrologers that were in his realm (Daniel 2:20).

God picked the other three because of their *faith* in God. They refused to worship any other god but God Almighty and were thrown into a super-hot furnace. They were protected by God’s angel because of their *faith*. That is why God gifted them as wise men (Daniel 3:19-26). It was because of their *faith*.

Why did God pick Daniel as a personal prophet? In Daniel 6 even Daniel’s *faith* was “tried” when he was thrown into the lion’s den and not eaten (Daniel 6).

When Daniel read *The Torah*, he found Moses prophesied Israel’s captivity (Deuteronomy 32). He also read Jeremiah about this captivity lasting seventy years (Daniel 9:2). All the knowledge committed Daniel “*to prayer and supplications, with fasting and sackcloth*

and ashes” to seek God’s will (Daniel 9:3). The rest of Daniel 9 is his long prayer not for himself, but for Israel.

Daniel had a vision when in a deep sleep and felt a hand touch him on his face. God loved Daniel for a great reason, “*And he said to me, O Daniel, a man greatly beloved, understand the words that I speak to you, and stand upright: for to you am I now sent. And when he had spoken this word unto me, I stood trembling. Then said he to me, Fear not, Daniel: for from the first day that you did set your heart [desire] to understand, and to chasten yourself before your God, your words were heard, and I am come for your words [answers]*” (Daniel 10:11-12). You need to know why God chose Daniel.

God chose Daniel because he had a right heart, and like King David, he had his *faith* tested, as well. God gave him talents of wisdom, knowledge besides Daniel’s *faith* and right heart. What a man, “*Greater love has no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friends*” (John 15:13). That is it!

“*Love*” is the cardinal principle. True love, God’s love, “*agapé*” proves “*friendship.*” Daniel was tested over and over, even to the death, in the lion’s den. Ultimately, God tested his heart.

Daniel was more than a Prophet. He was God’s friend. Dreams and visions prove one’s *faith*, but “*what you ask for*” reads the depths of what you desire above all if you are willing to die for it. This is what Christ said.

A PROPHET'S REWARD

Christ said, every man will receive a reward (bonus) according to the life each person lives (Revelation 22:12).

GIFTS AND REWARD

Gifts are free. There is no effort a person must expend to receive the gift. Daniel and his three friends received many gifts from God. These gifts were free because of their *“faith predicated upon their works.”*

Faith has works. What kind of *faith*? Works which test your *faith*. The Apostle Paul makes it clear, *“Though I speak with the tongues [languages] of men and of angels, and have not charity [God’s Love], I am become as sounding brass, or a tinkling cymbal. And though I have the gift of prophecy, and understand all mysteries, and all knowledge; and though I have all faith, so that I could remove mountains, and have not charity, I am nothing”* (I Corinthians 13:1-2). My, my the apex is to have God’s love to be willing to die for each other. So simple. God is love and if you do not have The Love of God, you do not know God, *“Beloved, believe not every spirit, but try the spirits whether they are of God: because many false prophets are gone out into the world”* (I John 4:1). *“He that loves not knows not God; for God is love”* (I John 4:8). Paul also repeated this. The foundational works of God are all motivated by God’s love. It is what He is with no darkness, or lies to deceive. Prophets can have God’s true words, or there are the false Prophets, teaching falsehoods. God’s

friends after many tests of *faith* prove not only are they Prophets of God but have become His friends. Friends are not only compatible, but trustworthy and faithful with God's love. Daniel had all these "*works of faith*" with no idols, but a zeal and love for God.

Simon Magus was willing to be a Christian and be baptized because it was another way for him to make money (Acts 8:12-19). Peter knew better and here was his rebuff, "*But Peter said to him, your money [mammon – fiscal god] will perish with you, because you have thought that the gift of God may be purchased with money. You have neither part nor lot [part] in this matter: for your heart [desires] is not right in the sight of God*" (Acts 8:20-21).

IDOLS

What is idolatry? Anything that stands between you and God. Simon Magus thought he was right and not God. God has no ego – but only love for His whole creation. Prophets are not just anyone, but have proven their works of *faith* with love. Then, you are able to be friends of God as well.

CHAPTER 3

FALSE FRIENDS

The problem is, how do you know your friends are true friends? The Word of God can give you the solution.

COMMANDMENTS

Why did God give *The Ten Commandments*? When children are playing and left to do whatever they are doing and it is safe – there is no problem. However, if a parent sees some danger they must do something to protect their children. Loving parents keep their eyes on their children, so no harm, or evil comes to them. Whenever God sees His children going into harm's way, He always warns them so they do not have to suffer pain or pay a penalty or worse – death. *Covenants* are “*contracts*” teaching His children what is safe and what is not safe. It is that simple.

The First Covenant God gave to Adam and Eve, was *The Everlasting Covenant* which promised Salvation, The Tree of Life – Paradise. Isaiah 55:3 reveals this *First Covenant* of God was *Everlasting* – “*never ending*” with the sure mercies of David! It was unending because it had The Tree of Life with healing waters just as it will have under The New Heavens and on The New Earth (Isaiah 55:1 and Revelation 28:2). There was no curse, or judgment in this New Garden

of Eden, but only, to have the opportunity “*to choose.*” “*A choice*” is “*a warning.*” If you choose to do “*right,*” you have a chance to live “*eternally*” with The Tree of Life. The other choice you have, you can eat from The Tree of The Knowledge of Good and Evil (choosing for yourself) and you end up dying.

This *Covenant* mandates no penalty, but its outcome is left to one’s free choice. The sin without a *Law* is “*making the wrong choice*” when you have been warned. The sin was dishonoring your Father by not respecting Him.

All other *Covenants*, *The Old Covenant*, or *The New Covenant*, have different goals and purposes. *The Old Covenant Law of Moses* was to bring you – “*To Christ.*” *The New Covenant* was “*Christ – In You,*” made you perfect. Quite simple.

FRIENDSHIPS DIFFER

There are good friendships and bad friendships. *Biblically*, you have proven how cautious God is, before he believes one is His friend. Even a Prophet of God is tested before God reveals His innermost goals and purposes, “*Do this now, my son, and deliver yourself, when you are come into the hand of your friend [neighbor]; go, humble yourself, and make sure your friend*” (Proverbs 6:3). Simple.

Even Christ experienced this lesson when He fed the four and five thousand, “*Jesus answered them and said, verily, verily, I say to you, You seek me, not because you*

saw the miracles, but because you did eat of the loaves and were filled. Labour not for the meat which perishes, but for that meat which endures to everlasting life, which the Son of man shall give to you: for him has God the Father sealed” (John 6:26-27).

Solomon warned his son, about true friends. Some are friends and some neighbors, as long as they are friendly. Only God knows how to choose a true friend. You need to follow God’s example to learn how to be a “*real*” friend of God. Proverbs 18:24 insists, the only way to have friends is to be “a true friend,” yourself, and never harm anyone. Next, as a real friend, your example must be to always tell the truth – never lie or be a hypocrite, “*But let your communication be, Yea, yea; Nay, nay; for whatsoever is more than these comes of evil*” (Matthew 5:37).

God warns in a time of pressure to keep your mouth closed even when family members can not keep a lid on theirs. No one, but the exceptional ones, will be friends (Micah 7:5). The Apostle James concludes, you must prove everyone in order to find “*a true friend.*” Then you can be a friend to them.

Abraham was such a friend, God had picked his progeny to be His chosen people, “*But you, Israel, are my servant, Jacob whom I have chosen, the seed of Abraham my friend*” (Isaiah 41:8). The same is repeated by King Jehoshaphat, Abraham was God’s friend (II Chronicles 20:7). In Exodus 33:11, describes Moses speaking to God “face to face” as His friend. After Israel sinned with the golden calf, God intended on de-

stroying them. Notice what God said to Moses, when Moses pleaded for Israel to be God's people, "*And he said, I will make all my goodness pass before you and I will proclaim the name of the LORD [authority – an angel] before you; and will be gracious to whom I will be gracious, and will shew mercy on whom I will shew mercy*" (Exodus 33:19).

Do you comprehend what God told Moses? He declared to Moses – The Goodness of God is only given to those He chooses. Notice why God gave grace to Israel, "*And the Lord said to Moses, I will do this thing also that you have spoken: for you have found grace [mercy] in my sight and I know you by name [personally]*" (Exodus 33:17). Wow! Moses was His friend. God gave mercy to His friends because He could trust them. *The Goodness of God* knows His friends' "*hearts.*" Moses, as well as Abraham, Daniel, including The Twelve Apostles were God's friends.

Through Christ, being The Word of God, includes The Apostles as God's friends. God counsels His friends because they are in the flesh but God is "*a spirit.*" As humans with the weakness to sin, God would never choose to do this, because God is perfect, Holy and all-loving. God counsels His earthly friends because, although, they are living in the weakness of the flesh, God knows they have "*a good heart.*"

When God told Abraham that Sodom and Gomorrah would be destroyed, God accepted Abraham's "*counsel*" not to destroy the cities, if ten percent were righteous. When Moses pleaded to keep Israel as His

people, because of His friendship with Moses, God gave Israel leeway through His “*grace.*” Because God had allowed Moses as a friend, He permitted him to write some of “*the statutes.*”

Moses told God, his people, Israel could never stay married until death do them part as Adam and Eve. Because Israel could not stay married to one woman God allowed Moses to create the statute for divorce (Deuteronomy 24:1-6.)

Even Peter declares the original marriage until death do you part cannot work (Matthew 19.) Peter said, it is better for a man not to marry. Christ said, Peter was right, in that only some men could remain “Eunuchs” for the sake of The Kingdom of God. So Monks were formed. Monks, however, should not be hiding from the world, but should be witnesses for Christ. Jesus said, you should be in “*the world,*” but not follow its evilness.

FRIENDS OF GOD

“*Faith*” is the essence of friendship. *Faith* founded upon sin, or those who sin, willingly, by nature, as ex-prisoners, liars, thieves, is based upon real *faith*.

Blind faith is not the way of God. Godly *faith* has substance or proof behind it (Hebrews 11:1.) Christ did not say you shall know them by their “*words.*” Christ said, by their fruits (past, present and future) substantiates real *faith* (Matthew 7.)

Science is “*blind faith*,” because at every age, they are consistently, changing what they believe in. Science always seems to have to start over again. With humans, the truth of science, continually, changes. Today, with so much knowledge being discovered, it changes every 25 years. That is called “*blind faith*.”

“*Faith without works*” James said, is *dead faith* or belief. That is living in a world of blindness. God has a system of proving one’s *faith*. *Faith* by human works, through good fruits, is helpful to all God’s creation. To do so you must live by every Word of God.

CHAPTER 4

GOD'S WORD

The Word of God comprises all that “*God is.*” Christ is The Word Of God. He is the author, or one, who has lived every Word of God. Christ announced, whatever The Father does – He also does (John 5:19.)

FRIENDS AND GOD'S WORD

God is reproducing Himself which is the complete story, of the entire *Bible*. Jesus said, instead of worrying about your human survival, you should live by every Word of God.

Listen to Christ's words, “*And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul; but rather fear him which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell*” (Matthew 10:28).

The Greek word for “*soul*” is “*psuche*” which means “*breath.*” Breathing, gives oxygen to the body, causing to have heat, or energy, in your bodies. This energy, about 98.6° causes “*motion*” – physiologically, which is “*life.*”

The soul is not immortal, but merely ignites your bodies (“*soma*” in Greek) with “*life.*” Only God can give “*life,*” as He gave “*life*” to Jesus and through His death

for everyone's sin (John 5:26). Now, with the power of life, He, also, can be The Judge in The Judgment. He has power from God, to give "life" or take it, "*For the Father judges no man, but has committed [given] all judgment to the Son*" (John 5:22).

God does not judge mankind. God is not human, but His Son, Jesus was. He was The Son of Man and that is fair but also true justice. Christ lived life, like any human does. Everyone is without excuse.

The Word of God (not Christ's) is perfect in every way, Holy and pure, without any flaw (a speck), or blemish. Only God is good, as Jesus said, in Matthew 19:17.

The Word of God will create true friendship, because an individual can have absolute, proven *faith*, without the tiniest doubt. Wow!

GOD'S PERFECT WILL

The "*will*" of God, has been written for thousand of years, from Genesis to Revelation, for all to read. Your understanding of doctrines and aspects of *The Bible* may vary, but God works "*In You*" on an individual basis. Thank God! Otherwise, you would be doomed to be judged, as a whole.

God's "*will*" is written to you, "*privately,*" as a personal Trust Fund with God, as your Executor. Christ is your Mediator, as your Defense Attorney, "*By so much was Jesus [Hebrew – Joshua] made a surety [absolute] of a better testament*" (Hebrews 7:22). The Priesthood

was changed which meant *The Law* had to be changed (Hebrews 7:12). This caused a better Priesthood, with a better *Testament* (witness).

Now you have Christ as your example, who lived every Word of God. This *Covenant*, was totally different, than *The Covenant* made with the fathers, who came out of Egypt (Hebrews 8:9). This *New Covenant* changes the desire of your heart and changes your very nature to think like God (Hebrews 8:10). It, literally, begins to change your heart.

The Old Covenant had to vanish away, because it was out of date, but not *The New Covenant* (Hebrews 8:13). Christ, as your example, changed you from *The Old Covenant – Law of Moses* to *The Law of Christ*. With *The New Covenant*, you can receive “Eternal Life” as your inheritance (Hebrews 9:15). That is God’s personal Trust Fund, as His will, “*There is therefore now no more condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk [works] not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. For the law of the Spirit of life in Christ Jesus has made me free from the law of sin and death*” (Romans 8:1-2).

Scripturally, this is God’s written will? “*For where a testament is, there must also of necessity be the death of the testator [witness]*” (Hebrews 9:16).

The Will of God is your personal Trust, with the death of Christ no longer in *The Old Testament Law of Moses*, but as your mediator of a new will, in a *New Covenant*, “*To the general assembly [called out ones] and*

church of the firstborn [like Christ], *which are written in heaven, and to God the judge of all* [world] *and to the spirits of just men made perfect, And to Jesus the mediator* [in our defense – mercy] *of the new covenant, and to the blood of sprinkling* [on us], *that speaks better things than that of Abel* [future promise]” (Hebrews 12:23-24). **Jesus is The Author of God’s will** (Hebrews 12:2). **He became The Author by living every Word of God** (which is His “will”).

GOD’S VOICE

No one has seen God, or heard *His voice*. Also, God’s voice is projected from God’s Holy Spirit (Hebrews 3:7). **God’s Holy Spirit is used as His voice, consisting of God’s power, love and His superior sound mind** (II Timothy 1:17). **God, is the totality, of His eternal energy, power, love (heart) and magnificent sound mind. Jesus has received the full measure of God’s Holy Spirit** (John 3).

When Christ spoke, it was God, The Father’s Word through God’s Holy Spirit. Humans, however, only receive God’s “*word*,” according to the proportion a person seeks God. God does not seek you, until you want Him like any loving parent.

MANKIND’S WEAKNESS

A person’s flesh is weak because everyone was born wanting to survive above all else. Everyone was born to sin. Therefore, your mind and heart (desires) are very frail. Human tendency is to please your natural

born passions and desires. Cannibalism, most inherently, is not only disgusting, but it may be you as the meal. Example, after example, the sex drive for men is stronger at certain times than others. Like any male animal, when you are “*in heat for sex,*” almost any woman becomes desirable. The state of your mind, because of your desire to survive, will sin.

Christ, clearly, warned how weak your mind can be. Your conscience can be weakened, “*When the unclean [animal] spirit is gone out of a man [repented], he walks through dry places, seeking rest and finds none [torment], Then he said, I will return into my house [like before] from whence I came out; and when he is come [as he was in stress], he finds it empty, swept [cleaned out], and garnished [polished]. Then goes he [in torment], and takes with himself seven other spirits more wicked [worse] than himself, and they enter in and dwell there: and the last state of that man is worse than the first*” (Matthew 12:43-45). Because of your weak flesh, your human mind is, extremely, susceptible to sin.

James, The Apostle, goes through a weak person's frail mind writing just how it happens, “*If any of you lack wisdom [sound mind], let him ask of God, that gives to all men [world] liberally [everlasting Covenant], and upbraids not [the world]; And it shall be given him. But let him ask in faith, nothing wavering [doubt]. For he that wavers is like a wave of the sea driven with the wind [no wisdom] and tossed. For let not that man think that he shall receive anything of the Lord. A double minded man [torment] is unstable in all his ways*” (James 1:5-8). Wow, how weak the human mind is. James paints

you a very clear understanding of what God wants you to know. Your human mind is easily and psychologically unstable.

“Perfect faith” is the answer. If you are weak, admit openly, to God how vulnerable you really are. God will then hear and bestow wisdom *“In You.”* No longer will you go by your natural feelings, but The Gift of God’s Sound Mind, by God’s Holy Spirit, will be granted to you.

WHEN SIN ENTERS

“Let no man [world] say when he is tempted [born that way] I am tempted of God [God’s fault]: for God cannot be tempted with evil, neither tempts he any man [God has no ego]: But every man [world] is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust [human nature], and enticed [human desires]. Then when lust has conceived, [sinned] it brings forth [produces] sin: and sin, when it is finished [relieved], brings forth death” (James 1:13-15).

That completes the story of how your human choices follow your human nature to the end – death. Death, is the result of a sick person getting sicker, until sin destroys the individual and they die.

Christ came to save what was lost (Matthew 18:11). The Tree of Life, which was Christ, by God’s Holy Spirit doing the work was lost.

He came to restore what was lost as your Mediator who paid the price for your sins. That is why John

1:17 says Christ brought “*grace*” (mercy) and “*truth.*”

“*Truth*” is “*God’s Word*” in John 17:17. Truth comes by God’s Holy Spirit, “*in part*” to you, as God sees your “*faith.*” If you want more help, from God, through His Holy Spirit, you will receive it.

God’s “*word,*” every Word of God, is the answer, not merely learning, or understanding “*a part*” and then burying it. You need to, continually, grow in God’s Spirit which is His word.

Faith,* is the growing trust you have “*In God,*” until you become perfect like Him (Matthew 5:48). Then you will continue in every Word of God, “*eternally,*” as a gift, from God’s *Everlasting Covenant.

CHAPTER 5

ETERNAL GIFT OF GOD

The Bible, ends with a “*new beginning*,” when God makes all things new (Revelation 21). Is this the end of God’s Word, or really, the beginning of a new book?

NO END OF BOOKS

Christ, John The Apostle, told you that all He did and said has no end of writing books (John 21:25). Writing more books than the world can contain is a lot of books. After all, Jesus is, also, every single Word of God.

The Alpha and The Omega is the precise way God reproduces Himself in His Image. God’s Holy Spirit is Himself, with power, love and a sound mind (II Timothy 1:7).

God has a library of His written books. *The Bible* only covers one book, explaining, how God makes everyone in His Image. That is it! God’s books are written by Him through His Holy Spirit.

EVERLASTING COVENANT

The Everlasting Covenant of God is unending and *eternal*, because it never ends. This *Covenant* is God.

God's Kingdom when God will be Himself – forever, and ever. His *Everlasting Covenant* and The Kingdom of God is The Word of God.

GOD'S ETERNAL TEMPLE

Under The New Heavens and on The New Earth, God and Christ, only, comprise The Temple (Revelation 21:22). Both, are God, Almighty as duplicates, one is The Father and the other is The Son. God is The Only One True God, but Christ is now every Word of God, worthy of worship like The Father (Revelation 5: 9 and 12-13).

Remember, in the parable of The Lost Son (Israel and the World) the faithful son was given a very special inheritance. When the faithful son saw his father giving a party for the returned son, how did the honorable son feel, “*And he was angry, and would not go in [feast]: therefore came his father out and entreated him [Jesus]. And he answering said to his father, Lo, these many years do I serve, you neither transgressed I at any time your commandments: and yet you never gave me a kid [party] that I might make merry with my friends. But as soon as this your son was come, which has devoured your living with harlots [inheritance] you have killed for him the fatted calf [a feast]. And he said to him Son, you are ever with me, and all that I have is yours*” (Luke 15:28-31).

This is the account between the Ten Lost Tribes of Israel and Judah, The Jews. The only real faithful son, without complaining, was Yashua, The Christ.

Christ was The Only One, who lived by every Word of God, *faithfully*. He was completely, *faithful*, according to God's "will" by His free choice. He was The Perfect One and was The Author (book) of Your Salvation. He was The Worthy One to be worshipped with God, both comprising The Temple of God.

As The Author of Eternal Life, His *Covenant* was *The New Covenant* to make everyone perfect (Matthew 5:48.) Christ came to prove humans could live every Word of God, perfectly, by God's Holy Spirit.

God is more than "*perfect*." He is also Holy, without blemish and pure. Christ was perfect, but He was clothed in God's "*glory*" when He was resurrected. With all His glory, He was then worthy to be The Very Christ, sharing His Father's Throne.

CHRIST'S REST

The Sabbath was a sign of God's people entering God's rest in Paradise. Who did the work of creation? Genesis 1 to 3 informs you it was God's Holy Spirit grieving over the waters.

God's Holy Spirit is the very power, love and wisdom of God's sound or logical mind. It was God's Holy Spirit which created all things. God's Holy Spirit is God who rested to observe everything was good on The Seventh Day.

Christ was the Word of God, by The Holy Spirit "*In Him*," creating all things and was The Sign of God's

Seventh Day Sabbath. The Holy Spirit, like Christ, made The Sabbath – Holy, which in turn, was literally, God. Christ is your Sabbath’s Days Rest through God’s Holy Spirit “In Him” and “In You,” “*Come to me, all you that labour* [no rest], [slaves] *and are heavy laden* [no rest], *and I will give you rest* [Sabbath]. *Take my yoke* [work] *upon you, and learn of me* [Christ – In You]; *for I am* [not forceful, but] *meeke and lowly in heart* [desire]: *and you shall find rest to your souls* [lives]. *For my yoke* [work] *is easy* [faith], *and my burden* [slave] *is light*” (Matthew 11:28-30).

Christ is The Sabbath and The Holy Days with all their Sabbaths. Christ is your lamb or sacrifice. Christ makes you sinless or perfect. He gave you God’s Holy Spirit on Pentecost and you will meet Him in the clouds as He returns to the earth, at The Seventh Trump. He has atoned for your sins to be His Bride during The Feast of Trumpets and Tabernacles.

“Christ – In You,” is all your Sabbath Rests so there will be no White Throne Judgment for *The Bride of Christ*, “*Verily, verily, I say to you, He that hears my word, and believes on him* [God] *that sent me* [by the Holy Spirit], *has everlasting life* [now] *and shall not come to condemnation* [judgment]: *but is passed from death to life* [eternal]” (John 5:24).

FAITH AND PERFECTION

Christ said, you as an individual will be rewarded by your personal works. It is not a church decision, but depends on every human in the world. What are your

works? It is not predicated by The Works of *The Law*, but by “*works of faith*” and “belief”– “In Christ,” as your Sabbath’s Rest. Christ does all “*the work*,” by God’s Holy Spirit, leading you into all truth, not by *Law*, but by “God – In You,” through Christ.

Here is Christ’s prayer to God before He was crucified, “*That they all may be one; as you Father, are in me [Holy Spirit] and I in you, that they also may be one in us [God, Christ Rest]: that the world may believe [all potentially saved] that you have sent me*” (John 17:21).

To believe Christ, as The Word of God, through God’s Holy Spirit, “*in faith*,” is *The Simplicity In Christ*. Christ’s *faith*, is The Author of Your Salvation, you follow that same *faith*, by resting “In Christ.”

CHRIST’S PROMISE

“*Verily, verily, I say to you, The hour is coming, and now is, when the dead shall hear the voice of the Son of God: and they that hear shall live. For as the Father [only] has life [eternal] in himself; so has he given [did not have it] to the Son to have life [eternal] in himself*” (John 5:25-26).

“Christ – In You” is The Hope of Glory (like God) fulfilling and explaining The Mystery of God (Colossians 1:27).

Paul, simply defines “The Simplicity – In Christ,” “*That their hearts [Laodiceans – Colossians] might be comforted, being knit together [united] in love, [Godly]*

and all riches in Christ of the full [complete] assurance [faith] of understanding to the acknowledgment of the mystery of God [in Christ], and of the Father, and of Christ; in whom are hid all the treasures of wisdom [Sophia] and knowledge [Gnosis].” Amen! You are being given The Wisdom of God – the greatest gift that leads you to Eternal Life. Tap into this wondrous truth.

SEEKING GOD

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 6

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *SEEKING GOD*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Complete Story – Vol. IV

What Is A Marriage

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

God's Three Covenants

What God Joins Together

God's Hidden Vail

Heaven On Earth

The Little Book

Testimony – Vol. V

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Paul's Religion

Temple – Vol. VI

History Of God's Law

The Christians Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VII

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VIII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. IX

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. X

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. XI

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

End Time – Vol. XII

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

The End Is The Beginning

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

God's Gift Of Inheritance

The Silk Road

The Great Falling Away

Study Tools – Vol. XIII

Who And What Is God's Word?

Chronology Of Christ

Origin Of Baptism

History Of God's House

Bible Study God's Way

Biblical World History

God's Image – Vol. XIV

Seeking God

God's Free Choice

The Jubilee

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

<i>PREFACE</i>	<i>vii</i>
<i>INTRODUCTION</i>	<i>ix</i>
LIBERTY IN CHRIST	1
DARKNESS – A DEMIURGE	7
DARKNESS – TO LIGHT	13
THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD	19
OUT OF DARKNESS	25
PROPHECY TO HISTORY	31
THE GODHEAD	37
GOD’S SACRED NAME	43
GOD’S NAME AND GODHEAD	53
THE GREATEST MYSTERY	59

PREFACE

Why does God want you to seek Him? The Apostle Paul wrote God is “*a consuming fire*” (Hebrews 12:29). God warned Israel not to come close to Mount Sinai, because they would die, immediately (Exodus 19:12).

Being in God’s presence would burn you and everything around you. As “*a consuming fire*,” His energy level is so intensely hot, everything physical, or anywhere near Him, would burn to ashes.

You dare not see God or hear His Voice (John 5:37). Although, when someone speaks for God, usually an angel is sent as a messenger. Which is reason enough not to come before Him, as you grow, you find other ways you can seek God.

No money is accepted for this book. You could use any extra funds you have to help the orphans, widows and hungry. Any comments and criticism will be appreciated. We are all learning God’s *word* and, through diligent study, are able to help one another. This free book is our way of sharing. We offer three CDs which allow you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: Vol. I – Vol. VIII; CD #2: All Other Books; CD #3: Articles on various religious topics. There is also a DVD with Art’s comments on each published book. The DVD and CDs are free.

Address: Art Mokarow, P.O. Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
E-mail: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Websites: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Books can be downloaded)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Christian Articles)

INTRODUCTION

One would think, the real reason God wrote *The Bible*, was to study church teachings. Most of you attend a church, or *faith* to worship God, so doctrine can be taught to know how to worship Him. Most churches and *faiths* make an “*assumption*” that you personally already know God. How could this be so, when you have not even seen or even heard His voice?

Even worse, if you saw Him, you would be destroyed. Yet, God clearly tells you to seek Him while He might be found (Isaiah 55:6). There must be some avenues which would lead you to know who God is, and what paths you should take?

Jesus Christ, who is The Word of God and, therefore, knows who God is, explicitly, tells you how you can know Him, “*Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus*” (Philippians 2:5). You need to know how Christ thinks. What mind? Paul tells you in detail, you need the same mind as Christ, “*Who, being in the form* [in Greek “*morphe*” or “*likeness*”] *of God, thought it not robbery* [stealing] *to be equal with God* [His Son]: *But made* [Christ’s works] *himself of no reputation* [greatest] *and took upon him the form* [likeness of] *a servant* [slave] *and was made in the likeness of men* [Son of Man]: *And being found in fashion* [in Greek “*morphe*” or “*image*”] *as a man, he humbled* [like a slave] *himself and became obedient* [*faithful*] *to death, even the death of the cross*” (Philippians 2:6-8). Jesus was a human while He lived, yet, God was “*In Him*” by being The Word of God.

That is the reason, He told Satan, that man has to

live by every Word of God. Christ spoke only God's "word" because He had *"The Mind of God – In Him."* This statement is very clear.

You, likewise, by having *"Christ – In You,"* also, have Christ's "mind" which is, also, The Mind of God. You cannot seek God through His body, or voice, but you need to ask God to help you "think" like God.

WHAT MAKES YOU HOLY?

Simply knowing *"Doctrine"* does not make you like Christ. Doctrine, merely, reveals how He wants to be worshipped. But you need to know which God you need to worship. This is what made Christ – "Holy" like God. This is what Gabriel, God's archangel, told Mary, when Christ was born, *"And the angel answered and said to her, The Holy Spirit shall come upon you [Mary] and the power of the Highest shall overshadow you; therefore also that holy thing [Holy Spirit] which shall be born of you shall be called the Son of God"* (Luke 1:35).

Gabriel told Mary, God's Holy Spirit, would overshadow her to create Jesus, The Son of Man. It was not Christ, the being which was Holy, but *"God – In Christ"* allowing Christ to have The Very Mind of God, which made Jesus "Holy." He was given The Mind of God.

Jesus, Himself, said, when He was about thirty years old, *"For the father loves the son and shows him all things that himself [God] does: and he will show him [Christ] greater works than these, that you [humans] may marvel"* (John 5:20).

God's Holy Spirit is God Almighty's power doing all things, and "The *Father – In Christ*" who did the work. The Son of Man, in His human body, could not do anything Himself, "*Verily, verily, I say to you, the son can do nothing of himself* [the human], *but what he sees the father do* [God's Holy Spirit] *for whatsoever he* [God] *does, these also does the son likewise*" (John 5:19).

God's Holy Spirit is God's very "*power*" from His mind, as The Word of God comes from His thoughts and mind. Your human bodies are merely tents or tabernacles, are not worth very much and do not produce much profit (John 6:63). Scholars call this state of human bodies "*a theophany*" or "*God – In You.*"

John explains, God's Spirit gives life and you, in your bodies can do nothing (John 6:63). Jesus concludes, "*The words I speak to you, they are Spirit* [not flesh] *and they are life* [Salvation]" (John 6:63).

Christ had *faith* in His Father, as God revealed His Word to Him. "*Christ – In You,*" little by little, reveals The Word of God "*In You*" to live by *faith* just as your Savior did. By becoming like Christ, you become like God, your Father. Your thoughts and mind will emulate God.

You, as human beings, cannot see God or hear His voice, because His presence would kill you. God's power (His Holy Spirit) reveals Christ's mind which is God's mind and thoughts, "*Let the wicked forsake his way and the unrighteous man his thoughts* [mind]: *and let him return to the Lord* [seek God] *and he will have mercy upon him; and to our God for he will abundantly*

pardon” (Isaiah 55:7). When sinners repent God will pardon and forgive their sins. Why? “*For my thoughts are not your thoughts [mind], neither are your ways my ways [works], said the Lord, For as the heavens are higher than the earth, so are my ways [works] higher [greater] than your ways [works] and my thoughts than your thoughts. For as the rain comes down and the snow from heaven and returns not hither [heaven] but waters the earth and makes it bring forth and bud, that it may give seed to the sower [servant] and bread to the eater. So shall my [God’s] word be that goes forth out of my mouth: it shall not return to me void [empty] but it shall accomplish that which I please and it shall prosper [succeed] in the thing whereto I send it*” (Isaiah 55:8-11). These words could not be clearer!

Thus, you seek God, not by seeing or hearing, but by God’s Holy Spirit revealing God’s words, His thoughts and mind are through Christ. Wow! This is a wonderful truth unraveling part of “The Mystery of God.”

Amos, tells you, “*two cannot walk together as friends, unless they be agreed*” (Amos 3:3). You are ready to, *scripturally* discover why God will not reveal Himself.

CHAPTER 1

LIBERTY IN CHRIST

“For the creature itself was made [created] subject to vanity [no reason] not willingly [by choice] but by reason of him who has subjected [slavery] in hope. Because the creature [Homo sapiens] itself also shall be delivered from the bondage [slavery] of corruption [sin] into the glorious liberty of the children of God” (Romans 8:20-21).

Two verses explain how God wants you, first, to seek Him, so you can begin to think like Christ.

THE WORD “LIBERTY”

The Greek word for “*liberty*” is “*eleuthria*.” “*Eleuthria*” connotes “*complete and total freedom to do whatever you choose to do by free choice.*” Your free choice is a necessity for you to become like God (in His image).

God, your Father, is “*The I Am – The Existing One*” who chooses to be, whatever He wishes to be. God does not want robots to be like Him, but man is completely free to be, whatever He chooses to be. God could have made you “*perfect*” in the beginning, but then you would be unable to become a Son of God like Christ. You would have been a robot. “Freedom” being “complete liberty of free choice,” is necessary for

you to, eventually, turn to God. Only, then, can God make you in His “*image*.” For this reason, God made two trees in The Garden – one for “*Life Eternal*” and the other “*death*.” You know which tree Adam and Eve chose. In your lifetime, you have the opportunity (free choice) to choose.

Both trees were good, because God rested on The Seventh Day, as He was pleased with his creation (Genesis 1:31). The Tree of Good and Evil was good, because it allowed Adam and Eve to have “*free choice*.” This “*free choice*” gives “*liberty*,” which is what every individual wants.

LATEST HUMAN SCIENCE

In the last few years, *Science* has learned about the earth and the universe. They came, theoretically, to acknowledge the fact that mankind learns by what they call “*collaborative intelligence*.”

One person’s life experiences combined with what is learned by others, form a possible “*true summation*.” They feel that combined human intellect working together, in love and harmony, will finally discover what is The Mind of God.

Not one human, or group, have, or know, *all the truth*. Everyone will, only, know “*in part*” (I Corinthians 13:9). By growing in God’s love together, you then become like God who is “*love*” (I John 4:8). God’s love respects and deeply cares for His whole creation, since everything and everyone came from God’s bosom

(John 1:18). The creation was not made from nothing, but from God, Himself. All that is, or can be, is The Godhead from within The Father, Himself, “*For the invisible [secret] things of him [God] from the creation of the world are clearly seen, being understood [intellectually] by the things that are made, even his eternal power and godhead; so that they are [world] without excuse*” (Romans 1:20).

All that is, or can be, is of God (from within Himself), by His Almighty power and Godhead. All that exists, or can exist, comes from within God. Creation and life cannot come from nothing. Nothing always equals nothing. Nothing comes from nothing.

God’s mind and intelligence are superior to all others. His mind understands and comprehends everything that was, is, or can be. God’s thoughts, words and mind are motivated by His love for goodness, which is perfection. You, therefore, need to be perfect, to be in His image (Matthew 5:48).

SONS OF GOD

The Catholic Church was dogmatic and not willing to allow free choice (Romans 8), “*Therefore you are inexcusable, O man, whosoever you are that judges; for wherein you judge another, you condemn yourself; for you that judge do the same thing*” (Romans 2:1). Why are these people judging other church members in The Church of Rome? “*For there is no respect of persons [Jew or not] with God*” (Romans 2:11). These are Peter’s exact words in Acts 10:35. God accepts anyone

who fears Him and seeks *righteousness*. People are free, and at liberty to choose, what their *faith* should be and what, they understand at any period in their spiritual life.

Here was Paul's answer, "*For when the Gentiles, which have not the law, do by nature [conscience] the things in the law, these, having no law [command] are a law to themselves: Which show the work of the law written in their hearts [love], their conscience also bearing witness [proof] and their thoughts [mind] the mean while accusing or else excusing one another*" (Romans 2:14-15).

Paul's words describe the complete liberty to grow by their own understanding and *faith* – "*from faith to faith.*" Each person must work out their own Salvation, because everyone is "*justified by faith*" (Philippians 2 and Romans 1:17).

How is God making you, in His image? "*For whom he did foreknow he also did predestinate to be conformed to the image of his Son, that he might be the firstborn among many brethren*" (Romans 8:29).

Christ was The First Begotten Son of God, and He is to be followed by many brothers and sisters. Christ is in The Father's "*image*" and you are to be like Jesus (Hebrews 1:3). You, therefore, can become just like God, as did His Sons. The same Spirit which was "*In Christ*" which is "*In You*" is to be led by The Holy Spirit to become Sons of God (Romans 8:14). The Holy Spirit of God is God's very power and love with

a sound mind. When you are “*glorified*,” like Christ, and God, you will always understand the difference between “*good*” and “*evil*.” But this knowledge does not happen, until you are “*resurrected*” like Jesus.

At that time, you will have “*perfect liberty*” because you will be like God, “*For now we see through a glass [mirror], darkly [a shadow]; but then face to face [as God’s Son]: now I know in part [God’s image]; but then shall I know even as also I am known*” (I Corinthians 13:12).

Importantly, you must understand, as humans, you can only comprehend “*in part*.” You are not close to perfection. But, in “*the resurrection*,” you will see God and be just like Him. It is a genuine miracle, because you understand, full well, in this flesh you are only a shadow.

Once you are in the very “*Image of God*,” you will be just like Him, with all the D.N.A. like God. Now, Christians are only shadows in a physical body. No law is needed because you will, *spiritually*, think and do everything in *The Law*, because you will be God’s love. You will always do what is good.

ONE WITH GOD

“*Neither pray I for these alone, but for them also which shall believe on me through their word. That they all may be one as you Father, are in me and I in you, that you also may be one in us: that the world may believe that you have sent me. And the glory which you gave*

me I have given them; that they may be one, even as we are one. I in them [God's word], you in me, that they may be made perfect in one; and that the world may know that you have sent me and have loved them as you have loved me" (John 17:20-23). What a perfect explanation of being "One with God!"

When you read The Word of God, it becomes pretty simple. Jesus, by God, became His First Begotten Son and, through God's love, you, too, will follow. At "*the resurrection,*" you will be "*glorified*" like Christ and your Father. You, then, will be perfect.

Once perfected to be like Christ and God, having God's power, love and His sound mind, you will, always, in your *spiritual* bodies have a nature to know the difference between "*good*" and "*evil.*"

Like God and His Son, you will likewise create new things which will be perfect and produce "*good*" for everyone. You will have complete liberty to do whatever you want or desire, because you will always manifest God's "*righteousness.*"

CHAPTER 2

DARKNESS – A DEMIURGE

What is space? For years, *Science* thought space was either “*light waves*” or “*nothing.*” Amazingly, space, as darkness, is another world with an invisible substance, and God knew this from the beginning.

GOD AND HUMANITY

Homo sapiens do not know anything at birth. You learn and mature by your experiences. You are born naked, unclothed, both physically and *spiritually*. You only mature, in part, not knowing the whole picture for years.

That is how the lives of Adam and Eve began, unaware that they were naked (Genesis 2:25). Until Adam and Eve were told by Satan, they were naked, they were as new babes both physically and *spiritually* (Genesis 3:10-11). They were, also, *spiritually* naked from The Tree of Good and Evil, just like The Laodiceans in *The Book of Revelation*.

Eve, who was the deceived one and passionately, desired the fruit from the tree she wanted, only led her to death. The most serious sin Eve committed, was not physical, because all sin can be learned by experience. *Spiritual* sin, or “*missing the mark,*” was not knowing

the difference between “*good*” and “*evil*” which produced death.

Not comprehending what is moral, can destroy and corrupt an entire world through one’s progeny. The entire world has some wild ideologies, in knowing the difference between morality and evil.

Read what one of Christ’s churches believed, “*Because you say, I am rich and increased with goods [have the truth] and have need of nothing [the only true faith]: and know not that you are wretched and miserable and poor [know nothing] and blind [not wise] and naked [spiritually]. I counsel you to buy [work] of me gold [purify] tried in fire [purged of impurities] that you may be rich [succeed]; and white raiment [God’s righteous glory] that you may be clothed and that the shame [guilt] of your nakedness do not appear [pure] and anoint your eyes [to see] with eyesalve, that you may see [understand]. As many as I love, I rebuke and chasten: be zealous therefore [deep desire] and repent [change of mind]*” (Revelation 3:17-19).

BORN NAKED

When a fetus comes from a woman’s womb, it is completely naked and knows nothing. God found Jerusalem – The Mother of All (Galatians 4:26-27), “*And as for your nativity [birth], in the day you were born your navel was not cut, neither were you washed [cleansed] in water to supple you; you were not salted at all, not swaddled at all. None eye pitied you [left to die], to do any of these to you, to have compassion [mercy] upon*

you; but you were cast out [killed at birth] in the open field to the loathing of your person [Jerusalem personified] in the day that you were born” (Ezekiel 16:4-5).

God compares Jerusalem, an earthly location in a chaotic state, to a human birth. Birth, left to itself, alone, is helpless and without care, would perish. The creation itself, if left alone, will die and destroy itself, without care. Even human science realizes, in time, the universe will die, if left to itself, like a dark hole.

You have proven, *scripturally*, the physical universe is a type of God’s power and ability that He created (Hebrews 3:4). Like any artist, with a great piece of art, God, also, has left His hand upon His work. (Romans 1). God’s handiwork is obvious.

AN EARTH IN CHAOS

Before God created the heavens and the earth, they were in chaos, void and in darkness. The first thing God did, was to glorify the earth with His light and that light was “*good*” (Genesis 1:1-4). God did not leave the birth of His creation, the earth, in darkness to fend for itself (Hebrews 3:4). He, did indeed, make the light from the darkness called “space.”

The stars and the rest of the universe, with its galaxies were not put in orbit until the fourth day (Genesis 1:16-19).

Darkness is the absence of good since God said, the light was good. It was good because a person could

see and perceive with the light. Darkness does not allow you to see. God is the first cause (*singularity*) because only He has perfect understanding and wisdom. God loves His creation. The “creation” is God’s “*great masterpiece.*”

MAN IN GOD’S IMAGE

God wants to make man (*homo sapien*) into His “*image*” (Genesis 1:26). “*Image*” in Hebrew, being “*selem,*” “*a ghost*” or “*shadow,*” does not contain complete light having God’s “*goodness.*” Man is just a shadow (temporary) – not real. Left to himself, mankind dies.

Humans do not have life within themselves. God is of the living and has nothing to do with death (*sin*) (Matthew 22:32). Death is the lack of being like God, who only has life, which He gave to His Son. Thus, His Son can give life to you (John 5:26).

Humanity as *Homo sapiens*, are limited, being partly in light, but created out of the chaos of darkness. Humans need more light to fully perceive and understand who God is. You need to be brought out of darkness (naked) into God’s glorious light.

DEMIURGE GOD

The Sumerians, the most ancient people known historically, worshipped “*The Creation*” instead of The Creator (Romans 1). God allowed them to do so and they thought that everything physical could be a “god” because everything physical revealed God. They knew

God lived in The Heavens and called Him “*Anun-naki*,” The *SkyGod* (in their language.) They decided God went off to be by Himself, so they worshipped “parts” of His creation.

Space, or darkness, was called “*demiurge*” or “small power.” The Sumerians knew darkness (space) had matter, or anti-matter, like Science has recently learned. They prayed to this god, as well as all of the creation. They knew darkness led to death like a dark hole. “*Death is the absence of life.*” God is life.

Adam came from the dust, which originated from darkness and had some light, but was still in darkness – not understanding good or evil.

When God breathed “*the ruach*” – God’s Spirit, into Adam’s nostrils and He became a living being, He was the first Homo sapien who came from the animal kingdom, as a humanoid. Neanderthals and all Homo erectus who walked upright, had existed for thousands of years.

Adam was not created as a Homo sapien until the sixth day (Genesis 1:24-28). Adam was the last to be created from the animal kingdom, but the first homo sapien with “*The Breath*” or “*Spirit of God.*”

CHAPTER 3

DARKNESS TO LIGHT

The entire universe with only the stars, “*as suns,*” gave life in a pit of darkness, called space. God assigned angels, according to their status, to keep the universe and heavens functioning properly. *Seraphims* with six wings, protected the access to The Throne of God – The Holy of Holies.

LIGHT IS ETERNAL

Since God is the only light and “*In Him*” is no darkness, He is complete and full of “*perfect goodness*” (I John 1:5). The solution was to make man (Adam) in God’s “*image.*” By removing any darkness from Adam, he would be completely “light,” like God and His *righteousness*. Instead of being naked, mankind needed to be clothed in God’s *glory* (His goodness and Life Eternal). Angels were given responsibility over God’s people, to protect and teach them “*the truth.*”

Thus, The Seven Churches (in Revelation) are kept safe and led in God’s light. God’s light is compared to the stars, which are “*suns*” (Revelation 1:20). The Seven Churches are *the seven candlesticks* like those in the temple. Candlesticks are fed by *the two anointed cherubs* by giving God’s Holy Spirit into each candle of the seven lamps (Zechariah 4:2-14). These seven an-

gels represent “*the seven eyes of God.*”

The seven spirits will become part of *The One Stone* rejected by God’s people, Israel and Judah. Israel and Judah are the branches of the grapevine, The Messiah (Revelation 1:4 and Revelation 2:16).

Jesus becomes Jacob’s ladder with angels ascending and descending from heaven (John 1:51). Clearly, the suns and stars are ruled by angels and are, also watching over Christ. Angels were considered to be divine and, therefore, worshipped as “*gods.*” Polytheism grew worldwide within The Churches of God, where Satan sits within The Seven Churches.

Everyone was worshipping false gods, and almost everything in the universe. However, God very simply tells you, prophetically, how He would make man in His “*image,*” as opposed to His creation, “*Then he [angel] answered and spoke to me, saying, This is the word of the Lord to Zerubabel, saying, Not by might, nor by power [force], but by my Spirit, said the Lord of hosts*” (Zechariah 4:6). Simple.

Humans are to become “The Sons of God” when they make their free choice to follow God, “*And the angel answered and said to her, the holy Spirit shall come upon you [Mary] and the power of the holy Spirit shall overshadow you, therefore also that holy thing which shall be born of you shall be called the son of God*” (Luke 1:35).

You are to work out your own “*Salvation*” with fear

and trembling – all predicated upon *faith* (Philippians 2). You must ask God for *the faith* Christ had. He knew all The Words of God were true (John 17:17) and likewise, God can change you by leading you to “*the truth of reality.*”

Darkness is, also, matter, or space, a duplicate of what is seen in the light. Stars, galaxies, earth and everything in it, including mankind by the spirit, have existed, eternally, as another dimension with different laws.

Man’s image (although with some light) is, also, in darkness like a shadow (ghost). Darkness is not good, because no one can see what is “*perfect goodness.*” God has made you imperfect with only “*a future hope*” of glory (Romans 8). Each human has the choice to choose God and His ways. Only then, after the resurrection, can you receive The Glory of God.

Liberty is essential, so that you, like God, can be everlasting creators always doing what is good. You are being reproduced by God, and The Holy Spirit is the seed for God to reproduce Himself.

The Queen of Heaven began with Eve, as a queen bee reproducing the bee hive. Those in Sumeria believed God fell in love with Eve, so deeply, that He was constantly having sex with her. The truth is angels, or spirits, do not have sex, as humans do.

Jesus said, “*the angels do not marry.*” Reproduction among humans just happens, unless the natural pro-

cess is hindered or blocked. Godly reproduction is always by free choice and planned parenthood.

ABORTION AND HOMOSEXUALITY

Why is God so intensely angered by the sin of abortions or homosexuality? What harm is caused? Since God is love, He only accepts birth when no harm is caused. Why does abortion and homosexuality cause sin?

Only God can judge the heart to determine good or evil. If one reproduces, or does not reproduce, as homosexuals, humans are deciding for God if their personal desires are right whether to have children or not.

Abortion is murder, because once a life begins within the womb and is killed, or aborted, God is removed from the choice. Humans do not know what is best for them. Only God can make that judgment. When you decide for God, and therefore, commit murder, you cannot resurrect anyone to come back to life. God can kill, but never murder, because He will bring everyone back to life in the future.

Obviously, homosexuals decide from the beginning not to have children because they cannot. They can only take someone else's child to raise, as their own. Adoption is not wrong, when parents do not want to have a child, or want to start a family. Humans cannot give Eternal Life to humans, so God, out of His love, adopts you from your human parents (Hebrews 9:27). Adoption is wrong, when caused by homosexu-

als, who could have had children by a marriage between a man and a woman. Only God can make that judgment according to an individual's heart and true desires. (Request the free book, *What Is Idolatry*).

To come out of darkness is always God's decision. God is real love where no one is harmed.

Deciding to marry in The Way of God, demands you think and have The Mind of God (and The Mind of Christ). Reproduction (The Way of God), demands God make the decision. Before humans can be at liberty, you must have no darkness or blindness concerning what is really good or bad. God reproduces Himself where there is no darkness "In You."

CHAPTER 4

THE LIGHT OF THE WORLD

Did you know, since the days of Adam and Eve, everyone knew, in order, to save mankind, a Messiah had to come? They also knew He would be born a human from Eve's seed or progeny (Genesis 3:15). History proves every culture, race and nation assured their own people that Christ would come.

PETER AND PROPHETS

Listen to what The Prophets of old preached, *“Searching what or what manner of time, the spirit of Christ which was in them [prophets] did signify, when it testified the sufferings of Christ and the glory that should follow”* (I Peter 1:11). From the beginning a Messiah was anticipated, but the questions were, when and who He would be. This was not Christ, as another *“god being”* but the same spirit which was in The Prophets. What was this *“spirit”* which was in The Messiah, The Savior of The World? *“To whom [prophets] it was revealed that not to themselves, but to us they did minister the things which are now reported to you by them that have preached the gospel to you with the Holy Spirit sent down from heaven; which things the angels desire to look into”* (I Peter 1:12). *“The Spirit – In Christ”* is the same spirit which is in *“The Prophets.”* Even

the angels did not know who Christ, was, or when He would come.

What came down from heaven was not Jesus, as a God *“being,”* but was The Holy Spirit of God. This Holy Spirit, as proven in Luke 1:35, overshadowed Mary and made Jesus a human being – *“Holy”* like God, Almighty. The Holy Spirit of God created all things. Jesus, in the flesh, inherited God’s Holy Spirit and created all things, as a begotten Son. Therefore, Jesus created everything from *“God’s Spirit – In Him.”*

You inherit The Holy Spirit of God through an adoption from human parents. This inheritance of The Holy Spirit is exactly the same given to The Prophets, *“For the prophecy came not in old time by the will [desires] of man: but holy men of God spoke as moved by the holy Spirit”* (II Peter 2:21). Prophets, however, are different from Christ. You have already read the answer, *“For we know in part and we prophesy in part”* (I Corinthians 13:9). The answer is, you and The Prophets only know *“in part.”* You do not know, perfectly, what is good or evil, nor do the angels. Paul continues by writing, *“But when that which is perfect [God’s image] is come, then that which is in part shall be done away”* (I Corinthians 13:10).

CHRIST CREATED EVERYTHING

Paul, a Prophet and an Apostle, said, *“It is not expedient [good] for me doubtless to glory I will come to visions and revelations of the Lord”* (II Corinthians 12:1). Paul saw in a vision a man who was in *the third heaven*

(of which there are seven) and said, *“How that he was caught up into paradise and heard unspeakable words, which is not lawful for a man to utter”* (II Corinthians 12:4). Paul, in vision, receives unlawful information with the ability to preach about Christ. He reveals the process of Salvation, as to how God makes mankind immortal and sinless through Christ (read I Corinthians 15 in detail).

You, as opposed to Jesus, are adopted to become Sons of God. Jesus, The Son of Man through Mary, was sent from Heaven by God’s Holy Spirit from birth. He is the only Begotten Son of God, but was not adopted. Upon receiving The Glory of God after His resurrection, became God.

How did He create everything (Hebrew 1:2)? *“For he whom God has sent speaks the words of God: for God gives not the Spirit by measure [part] to him. The father loves the son and has given all thing into his hands”* (John 3:34-35). Following is *The Bible’s* simple answer. God sent Christ from heaven, but how? Secondly, He only speaks God’s *“words,”* not His own words. Finally, from birth, Jesus, a human, was completely given all God’s Holy Spirit without measure which was unlimited. He completely had all The Spirit of God from His birth. In Genesis 1:2 when the creation was in chaos and complete darkness, The Spirit of God moved the waters covering the earth-to-be. What is this Spirit of God? *“For God has not given us the spirit [mind] of fear; but of power and of love and of a sound [wisdom] mind”* (II Timothy 1:7). There is the simple meaning of *“The Spirit of God.”*

The Holy Spirit of God overshadowed and moved the waters to become the earth, as Jesus did when He was born. The Holy Spirit is all God's power, love and wisdom. It is God who always does the work. God came down from Heaven through His Holy Spirit and made Jesus in God's own "*image*." Christ, a human had to have complete *faith* in His Father, by speaking every Word of God, which The Holy Spirit manifested "*In Him*."

You, likewise, need to witness what God's Holy Spirit reveals to you, but only "*in part*," until you become perfect in The Resurrection. Jesus, always, had to be perfect and sinless, or He would not be The Messiah able to Save The World (I John 4:14). Wow – an amazing thought!

Christ, by being totally *faithful* and doing The Will of God, became your High Priest when He was baptized. God anointed His Son by His Holy Spirit, as He came down from Heaven in the form of a dove (Matthew 3:16).

Again, God's Holy Spirit is anointing Jesus, as The High Priest. He was about thirty years old, as *The Law* states. That is why Christ approved John, The Baptist baptizing Him to complete all the *righteousness* of *The Law*.

"*Christ*" was a "*Servant*" who became "*The High Priest*." The Levites being *spiritual* (with *The New Covenant*) and not in *The Works* or in *The Letter* (written) of *The Law* (II Corinthians 3).

Jesus, from His birth, officially became, The Light of The World, “*The same was in the beginning [God’s Spirit] with God. All things were made by him [Holy Spirit] and without him was not anything made that was made. In him [God’s Spirit] was life; and the life [Holy Spirit] was the light [life] of men. And the light shines in darkness; and the darkness comprehended it not [good or evil]. There was a man sent from God [by God’s Holy Spirit] whose name was John. That same came for a witness, to bear witness of the light that all men [potentially] through him might believe. He [John] was not that light, which lights every man who comes into the world*” (John 1:2-9).

That is the whole story of Salvation. From the beginning, The Spirit of God, which was good and created everything by that light. The Holy Spirit was put “*In Christ,*” The Son of Man, and He was to Save The World (I John 4:14). The entire story is quite simple.

Jesus, a human, by His *faith* in His Father was loved by God, because He did everything His Father told Him to do, as prophesied by Moses (Deuteronomy 18:18). Christ was a True Prophet because all the works He did were good (Deuteronomy 18:19-22). He was The Light (truth) of The World and your Messiah by God’s Holy Spirit.

CHAPTER 5

OUT OF DARKNESS

Light came out of darkness and the whole universe (including humans) came from darkness into the light (John 1). God wants to make man in His likeness which consists of complete light with no darkness (Genesis 1:26). Light is reality and eternal. “Darkness” lacks “*the light*,” that only God can give.

DARKNESS IS BLINDNESS

You have learned that the state of man, in the beginning, was like a shadow (a ghost in darkness). The stars, galaxies, and the entire universe came from darkness (space). Existence in darkness means the universe was already in space, but invisible.

Christ stated “*spirit is spirit*” and “*flesh is flesh*,” and both exist, but in different dimensions of reality. God created darkness with everything seen in the universe. “*The universe*” manifests “*the invisible things of God*” (Romans 1).

God begins His creative power by building a model, or type, very similar to an architect sketching an idea. After editing, or adding, the plans are drawn. Next, a model is made before producing the real thing, which

lasts forever. God is perfect and to keep free choice, as essential, requires many systems to bring everyone to Salvation. As each person is different, therefore, various methods are needed to be employed to bring everyone – “To Christ.”

The Bible is a blueprint in how God makes man in His “*image*,” as Sons of God. (Request the free book, *God’s School*, to learn about a variety of ways God teaches you to be like Him).

Science is shocked needing to revise their previous ideas of how the universe works and was created. Now science admits darkness (space) has matter, similar to the physical universe.

Science, acknowledges that space has *matter* with energy, causing space to function, as well as grow. Space has a force of gravity operating with different laws than the rest of the universe.

Humans cannot know good and bad in the present state of darkness and light. The choice is yours, and is called, *repentance*, in *The Bible*. Repentance allows you to change how you think. God wants you to seek Him, think and follow His ways which are “*good*” for you. God has no darkness and knows only goodness.

“*To know*” in Greek is “*gnosis*” which is “*knowledge*” or “*truth*.” Truth is fact and, therefore, reality. Without God, as your Teacher and Father, you are in darkness and will forever be confused. A man, who lived in a graveyard, had a legend of demons Christ cast out

the demons, who are of the spirit world, and the man asked to be cast into a herd of pigs. Demons are so chaotic and confused, they have no idea of reality, and would rather see from a pig's point of view. At least pigs can use their senses to see and know what to do. God has a place for them. That place is where they will be "*tortured.*" In Greek, it is called "*tartaroo*" or "hell."

In English "*tartaroo*" means "*outer darkness.*" Outer darkness is at the limits of the universe to be, or not to be. Outer darkness is a mental state in which individuals are so confused, they have no idea of where they are, or what they can do.

To be in darkness is utter confusion, like being in a dungeon with nowhere to go, or anything to see or do. There will be weeping and wailing in this hell (Matthew 8:12). Darkness is an existence with no purpose or reason for being. Darkness as space is nothing but wandering not seeing anything, or having any reason to be in this "*darkness.*"

COMING OUT OF DARKNESS

To see "*light*" is to have hope, being set free from slavery. "*Liberty*" is freedom to have many choices, in order to do many different things, "*God has given them [Israel] the spirit of slumber [sleep], eyes that they should not see [darkness] and ears that they should not hear [listen] to this day*" (Romans 11:8). Here is David's prophecy, "*Let their eyes be darkened that they many not see and bow down their back away*" (Romans

8:10). They are in darkness without God and His light to see and understand, “*Who has delivered us from the power [demiurge] of darkness and translated us into the kingdom of his dear Son. Who is the image of the invisible God, the firstborn of every creature*” (Colossians 1:13). God sent Christ to be an example, to follow and to come out of darkness into God’s light through The Holy Spirit.

With Adam and Eve, God tried to teach them to eat from The Tree of Life, but they refused. They were not ready to be taught by God, or to receive His Holy Spirit.

On the other hand, your Savior, in *faith*, lived by every Word of God. Christ left the world as a witness, and to make payment for everyone’s sins. You are to walk, as He walked, by your free choice.

Christ is the light, the example of truth, for the world to come out of darkness. Here is Christ’s answer, “*Yet a little while is the light with you. Walk while you have light, lest darkness come upon you: for he that walks in darkness knows not whither he goes. While you have light, believe in the light, that you may be the children [of God] of light*” (John 12:35-36). Quite clear and simple to grasp.

God, initially, created darkness, “*the demiurge power,*” to keep you from not seeing, or understanding life and its purpose.

Primarily, God wanted mankind to receive The Holy

Spirit of God – The Tree of Life. But, God was rejected, so He had to give you His First Begotten Son to be your example (John 1:17).

Now, The Son of Man, a human, has shown you that it is possible for man to become like God. The choice is yours. History and prophecy have given you “*the proof of the pudding.*”

Famous French author, Migueal de Cervantes (1547-1616) wrote in his long tale of Don Quiote, “The proof of the pudding is in the eating.” How true! History and prophecy have surely given the proof!

CHAPTER 6

HISTORY PROVES PROPHECY

Moses predicts the coming of The Messiah and how to tell The True Savior from the false ones (Deuteronomy 18). If what is said occurs, then, you know He is a True Prophet. If what The Prophet preached does not happen, he is a false prophet.

PROPHECY

A Prophet explains success and how to profit from The Word of God. The Song of Moses, describes God's doctrine, which, He claims, will always produce good fruit from The Tree of Life (Deuteronomy 32). Prophecy is history in advance and will produce only "*good*" for everyone in the whole world. False Prophets preach about and teach you to worship "*counterfeit gods.*" The One Real God, who made everything, discloses the invisible things of God. All of God's Word is manifested "In Christ" who inherited The Word of God. The Holy Spirit of God leads you to the truth of creation and God's purpose. Prophecy tells you "*the truth,*" in advance, before it becomes history.

THREE HISTORICAL PERIODS

From the beginning, to completion, covers three epochs of human existence known as "*history.*" If all oc-

curs as history proves, then God is truly The Greatest Prophet of all.

- 1) The First Age was in The Garden of Eden where Adam and Eve failed, ate the wrong tree and had to find their way back to The Tree of Life – The Holy Spirit of God.**
- 2) The Second Age includes Cain and Abel, going to the flood of Noah, where the world once again lost sight of The True God and were wicked and violent. God flooded the world and baptized it for a new start.**
- 3) The Third Age is post-flood and the genesis of human effort to find The Tree of Life with its healing fountain of youth. Once again, mankind failed at The Tower of Babel, in The Land of Shinar, to forget the unseen God in the sky.**

Only Abraham was *faithful* and received The Promise of Salvation through his Seed. From Isaac to Jacob (who became Israel) into a nation which failed – with only a remnant willing to follow God Almighty.

Once Judah was left (the two and a half tribes) they ended in captivity like The Ten Tribes who had become slaves earlier. In Babylon, they learned the ways of their captives, confusing their Hebrew language by intermixing Aramaic, creating a Babylonian- Hebrew type of national language.

When King Cyrus, The Mede, permitted them to re-

turn to Jerusalem, they were already corrupted by The Babylonians and, once again, had nothing but troublesome times.

By the time of Christ's birth, Judah was under the dictatorial control of Rome. Decision by Rome included – Who would be their king to continue holding religious temples and priesthood captives and not give up their corrupt temple life. Jesus foretold of Rome's demise in 70 C.E., when the people were taken captive.

As usual, a remnant of Jews and Gentiles remained *faithful* to The Messiah, as Christians or Messianic Jews. With the release in 135 C.E. of Jews, Israel once again was a nation still in a time.

Today, almost the whole world is returning to The Tower of Babel, with all the violence and wars. Attempting to build a one-world government – all they will gain is a false peace – “*Peace, peace, when there is no peace*” (Jeremiah 8:11).

This Third Age ends, when God will destroy the world by fire, to purge sin in The Lake of Fire and will bring *The New Heaven* and *The New Earth*.

The first flood only baptized the world, so they would repent. This time, God will purge all sin with the death of all flesh, leaving a new world of *spiritual* beings baptized by fire, “*For this they willingly* [free choice] *are ignorant of, that by the word of God* [Holy Spirit] *the heavens of old and the earth standing out of the water and in the water: Whereby the world that then was,*

being overflowed with water, perished. But the heavens and the earth, which are now by the same word [Holy Spirit] are kept in store, reserved to fire against the day of judgment and perdition [outer darkness] of ungodly men” (II Peter 3:5-7).

Why does God hold back The Messiah’s return? *“The Lord is not slack concerning his promise [to Abraham], as some men [preachers] count slackness; but is long-suffering [extremely patient] to usward [the world] not willing [His desire] that any should perish, but that all should come to repentance”* (II Peter 3:9). The plan and purpose of God is for everyone to repent. This plan is not referring to Christians, for they have already repented and have God’s Holy Spirit. The rest of the world needs to repent and desire to follow God.

During these *“three ages of history,”* mankind followed their own reasoning without God. Only a remnant of Jews and Christian Gentiles had tried to seek The True God.

History has proven *Biblical* prophecy to be the absolute truth. Most of the world has yet to be saved under *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth* (Revelation 21:6-7). *“The Mystery of God”* still remains for most of the world. They need to repent and find The True God and Father of all. God has left you with pieces of His puzzle, love and power, as with Moses, who actually saw God’s *“back part”* – God’s glory (Exodus 33:18-19).

To be made in His *“image,”* you need to continually,

seek to know The True God. You know, initially, Adam was made as a shadow from darkness. To see Adam is like looking into a smoky mirror, where his form is, only partially visible.

Until you see God as He is, you will never know The Fullness of God (I Corinthians 13) You still only have knowledge “*in part.*” God does give humans a hint, of who He is. It is time for you to discover what God will allow you to know.

In previous times, God permitted mankind “visions” and “dreams” to know who The Real God was. The *biblical* disclosure is awesome and wonderful for it pictures you with Eternal Life. This is beautiful and more wonderful than mere man can envision.

CHAPTER 7

THE GODHEAD

The invisible God can be understood, by the creation of the world and by the things He made (Romans 1:20).

TRUE SCIENCE IS REAL

When you know how the universe had been created, then you can begin to know The Godhead and His power. Request the free book, *God's Science Vs. Human Science*, to discover how the universe is made and all the elements to answer the questions of The Godhead. What do you have to know, specifically, to be sure you have the facts, as opposed to theory? “*O Timothy, keep that which is committed to your trust, avoiding profane [unholy, false] and vain [no profit] babblings [theory] and oppositions of science falsely so called*” (I Timothy 6:20). The depth of this quote by Paul to Timothy is, like a hidden *scripture* telling you “*The Gnostic Writings*” are false and do not contain the real truth.

“*Gnosis*” is translated, “*science*” which means “*knowledge*.” But Paul tells Timothy, The Gnostic Books are not the truth, and at best, they are theory or human guesses by mathematical probability. There is always a thread of truth, but with each writing, they fictionally add to make it more interesting.

This thread of truth is based upon the same probability, as modern science, a branch of human ideologies based upon mathematics. The thread can have truth but has not been proven, absolute. It is probably only true by rolling the dice to see which idea keeps repeating itself. Science calls it "*experimentation*" from which the word "*experience*" comes.

Today, you use computers to multiply the human ideas called a "*hypothesis*," or a "*guess*." When repeated enough times, a theory is devised, which is, or is not, accepted by the scientific community. And this theory is still not necessarily absolute. As usual, with human nature, any hypothesis can be good or not, but at best is a good guess by experimentation. All gnostic books, or so-called human Science do not contain the whole truth, especially, when their guesses of truth cannot be proven. In Greek "*true gnosis*" or "*science*" is "*epignosis*." Godly science discloses the truth as to how everything began. "*Epi*" in Greek is "*the beginning*." If you do not know the mother or origin of all theories, they are not the truth, but only a guess. The Gnostic books and human science are the same based upon human reason or intellect. Posed here is the same problem, eating the wrong tree of good and evil. The answer always leads to death. Humans, not God, cause death.

EPISCIENCE

God declares that He is The Only One who declares the end from the beginning (Isaiah 46:9-10). You have proven this prophecy is historically "*the truth*." God

is **The Alpha and The Omega, The Beginning and The End.** (The mystery of The Alpha and The Omega is fascinating). (Request the free book, *The End Is The Beginning*).

Jesus is, also, **“The Alpha”** and **“The Omega,”** the beginning and the end, because He has all The Word of God – **“In Him”** (Revelation 22:13). Unless you know who God is, the best you can know is only **“a part of the truth”** (I Corinthians 13:9). Gnostic books, or human Science, reveals facts that are only partially true. All the truth and nothing but the truth, demands you know God, not only **“in part”** as doctrines, but **The Godhead, itself.** The Godhead is beyond human knowledge or ability. To even acknowledge who God is, or begin to know Him, you must start at the beginning.

A MATTER OF HEART

God is love, completing *The Law* (Romans 13:10). God’s love never stops loving, as God begins making you in His **“image.”** You must learn to love Him, as He loves you. God judges your hearts, and He is **The Only One** who can do this (Romans 14:4). Thus, He determines, whether, or not, you are willing to die for Him with your free choice.

CAN GOD BE FOUND?

Human reason without the truth, is at best, nothing more than a gamble. God guarantees an Eternal Paradise, a Jubilee of perpetual joy. Only God has life

and can promise prosperity forever. God can only be found when you freely love Him, as He loves you. Learning to love Him, as He loves you, is why you must seek Him. He is The Only One who can judge your hearts. Christ lives by every *Word of God*, so He is your example to follow.

DOCTRINE IS IN PART

God only teaches you “*in part*” as well as gives prophecy “*in part*.” Each part of The Body of Christ differs – a toe is not an arm and a foot is not an ear or an eye. Each denomination knows “*in part*” as doctrine, but all are The Body of Christ. As each part of Christ’s body is revealed, the world, learns to seek God and finds Him, through His Son, through love. God reveals Himself, little by little, until the world turns to Him. The world turns first from “fear,” then to “love” and, in time, to receive The Kingdom of God. The Godhead cannot be made known to the world. They must learn to love God and His Son, as they love the world. Only in this way can a “Paradise of Joy” be achieved for everyone. God discloses Himself one doctrine, or teaching, at a time, until everyone comes to *The Image and Stature of His Son* (Ephesians 4:12-13). You must respect all God’s people, as well as, those in the world (I John, 4:14) – that is “*The Will of God*.” You will, finally, see The Godhead, when you are resurrected and glorified like Him, because you will be just like Him and His Son.

CHAPTER 8

GOD'S SACRED NAME

Any attempt to describe God would be impossible. When a person meets someone with a multiplicity of talents, capabilities and abilities, it is difficult determining their entire personality and character. Imagine, God who has no limitations and is always creative. God has built everything and can do all things (Hebrews 3:4). How do you attempt to get a glimpse of The True God? God has different names so humans can understand His many capabilities. God, Himself, is nothing more than a miracle.

God needs many names to describe Him, perfectly. (Request the free book, *Who Is God*). Human minds, are too limited, to understand God. All human minds cannot, collectively, equal His mind. Who can compare to Him? No one! Individuals call other individuals by what they do, or how they behave. Take the name John Taylor, for example. The father, or grandfather had a career of being a clothier. His family name takes on the name of Tailor. If his first name is John and he sews clothing, he is eventually named John Tailor or John Taylor. How simple.

Others are not named after their abilities because a person may not know what they do. This is especially

true when they are too diversified. For example, they know the family is living by a river called *a fjord*. When explaining who that person is, individuals will call him by his first name. To distinguish one person from another, with the same first name and both live by a river, they usually designate a person according to the area they come from. Thus one person may be called John Rivers and the other would be called John Ford.

Names are symbols to identify each other. Look in the telephone book, many have the same first and last name and some take on a middle name or initial. Then an address, or a town may be designated. How does anyone give a name to a Creator who has no limits as to what He can do? There is no way. It is impossible. God had no parents to name Him. He is Holy, *perfect* and without any *flaws*. He is complete *goodness*. He is *unique*. He is The Only One who can be whatever He chooses to be. He can do anything and everything He wants to do.

Moses asked God, “*Who shall I say sent me?*” Remember, The Pharaoh believed in many gods. God told Moses to tell Pharaoh, that “*I AM*” sent him. It is brilliant! “*I AM*” merely identifies The One, who can *build all things* and has always existed. It is perfect! God is, therefore, The Only One who can build and do everything. What is God’s surname? There is only One God. God informed Moses, His surname is “*YHWH*,” meaning “*The I AM*.” “*The I AM*” is defined as “*He always existed*.” He can do anything and everything. His name is “*YHWH*.” What is “*YHWH*?”

THE HIGH PRIEST

A Priest was, only, able to use the name “*YHWH*,” on The Day of Atonement. According to The Levitical Law, only a Priest could say His name in The Temple. God was very *jealous* about whom He allowed to call his name “*YHWH*.” Here is the reason, “*You shall make yourself no molten gods.*” Why not?

God knew that Israel believed in many “*gods*” because they were taught about more than One God in Egypt. The question becomes which God is The Only God who builds all things? That is why God said, “*I am the first and I am the last and beside me there is no God*” (Isiah 44:6.)

In archeology, The Sumerians, in The Land of Shinar at The Tower of Babel, called this God – “*The SkyGod.*” He was so far in the heavens, He was unknown. He lived somewhere in the sky.

God told Moses, He would only make a contract with him and Israel (called *The Old Covenant*) (Exodus 34:27 and Deuteronomy 5:3). None of the fathers, or The Gentiles, had this *covenant promise*. Abraham, Isaac and Jacob were not under this agreement (Deuteronomy 5:3). Even Adam was not under *The Law of Moses in The Old Covenant*.

Adam and Eve never sinned according to *The Law*, because it was codified much later by Moses. They missed “*the mark*” by making a wrong choice (Romans 5:13-14). That was their sin. They had rejected what their Father

had told them. When *The Old Covenant Law* was ratified (codified) with Israel, a person knew how to pronounce, or call God by His surname. His real name was “*YHWH*.” Having only consonants and no vowels, no one, but The Levitical Priests, could pronounce God’s name. The pronunciation of God’s name was hidden for an extremely *good reason and purpose*.

GOD’S NAME

“*For you shall worship no other god: for the LORD, whose name is Jealous, is a jealous God*” (Exodus 34:14). Can you grasp what God just told Moses? God defined the meaning of His surname. What does God’s surname mean in the original Hebrew? Moses was told His name means “*jealous*.” “*God*” is “*a jealous God*” and has given Himself that name. God defines the name “*YHWH*” as *a mystery* which you are about to discover.

HIS NAME

The Sumerians, at The Tower of Babel did not know God’s real name. They called Him “*Anu, The SkyGod*,” meaning “*somewhere off by Himself*.” Obviously, God did not tell everyone His surname (*YHWH*). Without the vowels, the best anyone could do was “*to guess*.” In fact, God never told The Israelites His name. Why? God, being *jealous*, is very careful about with whom He entrusts His name. Israel lacked *faith* and had *a wrong heart* (Hebrews 3:8-10). The only name Israel knew for their God is “*The I AM*.” Exactly, the same name Moses used to tell The Pharaoh.

Israel knew God was *jealous* about His name and called Him “*Hashem.*” In Hebrew, the word “*Hashem*” means “*The God With No Name.*” Israel had not been given God’s name. God still accepted Israel as His people. Quite clear! In order to be His people, Christians, The Jews and The Muslims are not required to know God’s exact name.

The Apostle, Paul knew God did not demand His people to call Him by His *name*. Even God does not always call Himself by His name. At times, God uses one of His many other titles that will fit the context of what He plans on doing or what is on the agenda, “*In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth*” (Genesis 1:1). God chose not to use His name “*YHWH*” but used the name, “*Elohim.*”

God told Moses, “*The Lord [is] your God*” (Deuteronomy 18:15). Here God uses His name “*Elohim,*” who is The Lord. “*The Lord*” in Hebrew is “*YHWH.*” God’s title as “*God of Hosts*” means “*host of all armies.*” But, remember God has many titles.

The Athenians were *Polytheists* and worshipped many gods (Acts 17:23). They knew *the real God* was “*the unknown God*” just like The Sumerians, Israelites and, later, The Greeks.

Clearly, God does not want anyone, even His people, to say, or know His name, “*YHWH.*” Here is the only requirement God gives His people to be accepted by Him, “*Then Peter opened his mouth and said, Of a truth I perceive that God [not YHWH] is no respecter of persons: But*

in every nation he that fears him and works righteousness [good works] is accepted of him" (Acts 10:34-35). No demand, or requirement, is given about pronouncing His name correctly. God must have a different reason for using His name "*YHWH*." All God demands of His people is to "*fear Him*" and "*do good works.*" That is it!

THE DAY OF ATONEMENT

Only on The Day of Atonement was The High Priest permitted to say God's first name. Why? Because that was the only time The Priest was allowed to stand before God's *Ark of The Covenant, the mercy seat*. The Priests had to atone (repent) for their sins and the sins of the people. On The Day of Atonement, God pardoned their sins and reconciled with His people. Sin separates you from God (Isaiah 59).

Paul, The Apostle, explains the meaning of entering God's presence. Before you come before God, you must be like babes and *spiritually* grow to manhood, like Christ (paraphrased). Until then, "*We see through a glass [mirror], darkly; but then face to face: now I know in part; but then shall I know even as also I am known*" (I Corinthians 13:11-12). "*But when that which is perfect [fulfilled] is come, then that which is in part [body] shall be done away*" (I Corinthians 13:10). My, my, only when you are *face-to-face* with God will you know His name, "*YHWH*" and say it correctly, using all the missing vowels. Are you any closer to understanding why God is jealous of His name. In Hebrew and English, the word "*jealous*" connotes "*zeal*" or "*zealous.*" God *jealously* guards His name for a very *loving reason*. God is always motivated

by His *goodness*.

ABRAHAM, MOSES, DANIEL AND JESUS

Four men, Abraham, Moses, Daniel and Jesus, held a very special place with God. What did they have in common? “*And the LORD spoke to Moses face to face, as a man speaks to his friend. And he turned again to the camp: but his servant Joshua, the son of Nun a young man, departed not out of the tabernacle*” (Exodus 33:11).

This is amazing! Being a perfect Son of God allows you to face God and become a friend of His. Only then, will God tell you His *first name*. Friends call each other by their first names. Friends, *think alike* and will *do nothing to harm* each other.

Did Moses really see and hear God? No! No man has seen or heard God, as Jesus told you. When Moses was with God, He was shrouded in a dark cloud. Moses faced God, as a friend, but heard the voice of an angel (Acts 7:38). When Moses faced God and His *glory*, Moses' *face* began to *shine* like *the sun's glory* (II Corinthians 3:8-13).

Abraham, Daniel and Jesus were regarded as His friends. That is why Abraham, Daniel and Jesus had a friendly relationship with God.

You now know why God is *jealous* about His name and who can call Him by His *surname*. They must be more than Sons – they must have absolute *faith* in God, as a *friend*. Through this *faith*, God is making *man* in His

“image” and by faith, you are saved. With this complete trust, and growing into *The Love of God*, you are completing *The Law* (Romans 13:10). As a friend of God, He allows you to call Him by His name, “YHWH.” God’s name, “YHWH,” is “*The I AM*.” His name “*Elohim*” is all that God was, is, and will be. He is The Godhead, “*For this cause I bow my knees to the Father of our Lord Jesus Christ. Of whom the whole family in heaven [angels] and earth [humans] is named*” (Ephesians 3:14-15). The name “*Elohim*” means “*one who builds all things*” (Genesis 1:2 and Hebrews 3:4).

God’s first name is given only to those exceptional people who are more than Sons of God. They are considered a friend that God knows by name. They are friends of God who can stand, face-to-face with Him, and have a friendly discussion.

Moses once discussed divorce and marriage with God. God gave Moses *the statute for divorce* in Deuteronomy 24:1-22 (Exodus 33:12). Abraham, as God’s *friend*, convinced God, that if ten righteous men were in found Sodom, He would not destroy it. Wow! God allows, His friends only, to know and use His *first name*, YHWH. You are finally, coming to the answer of God’s sacred name.

GOD, THE FATHER

***The Commandments* mandate that you do not take God’s name in vain (Exodus 20:7). Why? *All of mankind’s “works” are for nothing. They are deemed unprofitable by God* (John 6:63). All the efforts of man are useless.**

Unless, God gives you permission to use His first name, you have *no right* to use it. God allows only His *friends* to use *the true meaning and pronouncement* of “YHWH.” There is a good reason why God allows only a few to call Him by His first name, “*When a prophet speaks in the name of the LORD, if the thing follow not, nor come to pass, that is the thing which the LORD has not spoken, but the prophet has spoken it presumptuously: you shall not be afraid of him*” (Deuteronomy 18:22). A false Prophet will never be God’s friend, because they spread falsehoods and literally, deny God. God has friends that He knows by name (personal) and He knows their *faith*. God only tells His name to His friends who know The Word of God, “*For whosoever shall do the will of my Father which is in heaven, the same is my brother and sister and mother*” (Matthew 12:50). You are in Christ’s family, as long as you follow God’s *will*. To be God’s friend is a great honor. The Twelve Disciples were Christ’s friends (John 15:14).

You, too, are God’s people and part of His family, as long as, you *seek God’s will*. Being God’s *friend* is a *special relationship*. God discusses His thoughts and purposes with you through *The Bible*. God, personally, calls you by your *name* so you can call Him by His *first name*, “YHWH,” because you are a *friend* of His.

What does God want you to call him? When you can be like Abraham, Moses, Daniel or Jesus, you will be on intimate terms with God. Christ further explains God’s *sacred name* stating when you pray, you should say, “*Our Father which are in heaven, Hallowed [holy] be your name [YHWH]*” (Matthew 6:9).

Christians and Messianic Jews are to call God “*Father!*” For God to allow you to call Him by His *first name*, you must be considered one of His friends. God will determine your absolute “*faith*” and “*trust*” – “*In Him.*” A repentant world calling God (Elohim) as their Father is sufficient. God’s personal name is only reserved for His *friends*.

Christ said when you pray, since you do not know how to pronounce His first name, you should describe what His name is. “*Hallowed be your name.*” God’s name is *private* and only to be used by His friends when speaking *face-to-face*. You, as one of God’s people, must acknowledge that His personal name is *very private*. God will allow you to call Him by His *first name* only when you see Him face-to-face, as *a friend* of His. It is sufficient for you to call Him Your Father because you know His name is Holy.

You may, also, call God by His many *titles*. One of which is “*Elohim.*” Jesus did not reveal His Father’s name, but Christians should reverence His name.

CHAPTER 9

THE NAME OF GOD AND GODHEAD

Seeking God can be quite a mystery. No human would have written a book, which is so confusing, yet all the pieces of the puzzle are there. The Mystery of God is “Christ – In You” (Colossians 1:27). Your Savior is your example, who lived by every Word of God. You cannot do so unless you live from “*faith to faith*” by doctrinal teachings. Each denomination is diverse with different doctrines and beliefs. You will be justified, not by doctrine, but through your *faith* (Romans 1:17).

LOVE SUPERSEDES DOCTRINE

Christ gave you the answer, as how the world will know you are The Disciples of God (learners), “*By this shall all men know that you are my disciples, if you have love one to another*” (John 13:35). It is not doctrine because you only know “*in part.*” If doctrine was the determining answer, the result would be what you see, “*That we henceforth be no more, tossed to and fro with every wind of doctrine*” (Ephesians 4:14).

Obviously, Paul wrote this was the problem, in his day, just as it is today. You need to read Paul’s answer to have unity in The Churches of God. Here is Jesus’s answer to “*doctrinal understanding,*” “*But speaking the truth in love, may grow up into him into all things,*

which is the head, even Christ” (Ephesians 4:15). That is a mouthful.

As you understand, “*doctrine*” does not get tossed around by every new teaching of doctrine. Keep to your *faith*. The way Christians are to grow, *doctrinally*, is by loving each other which God demands. “*Doctrine*” is secondary to “having God’s love.” Love fulfills all *The Law* (Romans 13:10).

Christians are to grow, doctrinally, as Christ taught you, Man’s way (as a dictator) is attempting to keep Christians duped and under their control. Christ came to give grace, forgiveness, then He brought God’s truth, as He was taught, as The Word of God.

John said, you do not know God unless you have the same love as He has (I John 4:7-8). This is actually very simple. God only reveals doctrine (partial truth) to those who act and are as babes who are willing to be taught (Isaiah 28:9). That is it!

GOD’S NAME

You have discovered that God does not allow you to even use His Sacred Holy Name, unless you become a friend of God, as Abraham, Moses, and Daniel. He has only revealed four consonants – “JHVH” for His name. You must, always, hallow that name, but God made sure you would not know His name until you have grown to the point and you become a friend of His. When Israel (The Ten Lost Tribes) and Judah (two and a half tribes) started to worship Baal out of fear,

but when they did not love God, He sent them into captivity. From Neo-Babylon to your present day, Israel had nothing, but trouble.

CONFUSION OF TONGUES

Originally, God confused the languages, to hinder Polytheism from growing. Then God divided the nations, by continents, to not corrupt the truth. He wanted to give them a chance to find the truth without others corrupting them from that truth. At this time, God was only interested in those who sought Him as Abraham did.

When Judah was in Babylon, God took the first step to keep them from the truth. God confused their language from the original Hebrew which created a form of "*Babylonian Hebrew*."

Prophetically, Israel was scattered (Amos 9:9). They were mixed, as corn through a sieve, into all nations. They had no way to know The Truth of God. Israel became part of The Gentiles.

Judah, however, was to keep The Sceptre of King David's empire till Shiloh (restoring The Ark of The Covenant) would come (Genesis 49:10). Christ's "*coming*" was to gather Israel and Judah into one stick or nation. Until Christ, as Melchizedek, God's name was hidden from Israel. In Babylon, under Nebuchadnezzar, there were 58,000 Levites taken captive, 38,000 were dispersed among The Arabs. Originally, Hebrew was confused with Aramaic. The original language was the

pictorial Hebrew, which God, originally, gave. This new “Aramaic-Hebrew” learned in Babylonian captivity, was distorted and called “*Babylonian Hebrew.*”

Once Judah, was allowed to return to rebuild God’s “*temple,*” Ezra found a copy of *The Law.* The problem was their understanding using a Babylonian Hebrew alphabet. This confusion made it difficult to understand the proper way to figure God’s Holy Days.

This was the same reason, in Christ’s time, there were two differing schools of thought in counting The Holy Days. One school “Hillel” figured thirty days later, than The School of Shammai. To this day, *The Holy Days,* in truth, are still unknown.

By the time of Maimonides, the wrong Hebrew is interpreted, as the official Hebrew Masoretic text used by Jews to this day.

No one could keep God’s Holy Days, accurately, because God was disgusted with their keeping The Holy Days and doing The Works of *The Law.*

God told them, until they “repent,” He would not even consider how they kept The Holy Days, or The Works of *The Law* (Isaiah 1:10-16). This is quite clear.

First, The Law was given, only, to Israel as *The Old Covenant* and was to be replaced with *The New Covenant.* Christ brought *The New Covenant* which changes your heart and your mind. You do not need any Law, since it is against your conscience to sin (Deuteronomy

5:3). *The Law of Moses* was only given to people with a wrong heart (Deuteronomy 5:29).

The Law of Moses is not restored till The Messiah comes, to bring Israel, along with the world – “To Christ.” This is at The Millennium. This is before God makes *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth* (Isaiah 66:22-23).

God always looks to the heart. Do you love God with all your heart and body (Deuteronomy 6:5)? That is what God wants, so He can reveal Himself.

First, you must come to *fear* God as Israel did. Then, you repent by having, a change of heart and grow to love God. Through The Holy Spirit of Truth, your mind will become like God and Christ (Philippians 2:5).

You come to love God as He loves you and, as one of His Sons, you become His friend. Then God will allow you to call Him by His private name, as Jesus does.

CHAPTER 10

THE GREATEST MYSTERY

The Mystery of God is “Christ – In You” which leads to the greatest mystery of all, which is finding out all about God, Himself. He is all and everything that is. He burst forth from His bosom and by His *word*, “*the universe*” came to be. By His “*word*,” God sustains everything and can give Life Eternal. How?

THE EXPANSION

Isaiah and David describe the entire space, as a curtain of fabric, stretching the entire universe and beyond (Isaiah 40:21-22). This fabric, is like a tent, or a tabernacle, in which everything dwells.

Moses’ tabernacle was a duplicate plan of *the universe*. The tabernacle represented the whole universe where mankind would dwell with God.

The space, for this curtain, was in darkness which God made. Within this darkness, all that was nothing, but was a shadow which contained all life. Outer dimensions then what is seen, has its own laws. Mankind was in this darkness, as well as, everything that can be observed by *the five senses*. In the darkness everything was invisible. When God said “*let there*

be light” everything became “*visible.*” This light was obviously, very *good*, because, then, a person could observe everything in it.

This light was God’s Holy Spirit which manifested “*the truth.*” The Holy Spirit was “*In Christ,*” in its fullness, from His birth. Christ was that life, as The Son of Man, which was The Word of God.

This darkness continues to grow with new stars, galaxies and nebulae. What else does this expanse reveal as the ages continues to pass?

GOD’S CREATION

In the beginning, God (Elohim) created The Heavens and The Earth (Genesis 1:1). When was this “*beginning?*” Since no one was there, no one knows, but clearly, God made the darkness first (Genesis 1:2).

The entire universe and everything in it was already in existence (including “The Spirit – In Man”). The Big Bang did not create everything, as the *singularity*. From the time, God said, “*let there be light,*” you could see and observe what was already in the darkness, with its elements of all things, which came from God.

God’s “*glory*” which is “*all of God’s goodness*” could now be observed. Life had been given by God’s “*glory of the light.*” When God first made darkness everything that was, or could be, was there by God’s Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit was God, Himself, which was

His power, love and a sound mind (II Timothy 1:9). Wow! This Holy Spirit which is “*power from God*” gave *the light* to allow The Six Days of Creation to be observed.

“*Yom,*” in Hebrew, meaning “*day*” in English, has “*no time limit*” attached, since God is *eternal*. Remember, Peter told you, “*a year*” to God is as “*a day.*” And “*a day*” is as “*a year*” (II Peter 3).

Until the stars appeared (on the fourth day) there was no way to know the seasons or time. No one could observe them in the seasons, or in the heavens. God formed a model for His creation before He gave light, or “*spiritual energy.*” Everything had been created in God’s *mind*, but He, also, formed a clay model of everything which was to be in the darkness, as well. The Big Bang, by the explosion of His nuclear power, unveiled everything including the expanding universe with *new suns* to be seen with their galaxies. As new suns are manifested, mankind can observe them by their five senses. It is an ever-expanding universe which has always been there, in darkness, when God created it. You do not know, how much time it took, for God to create darkness, as God is eternal. You must know all the elements in that darkness were in complete chaos (Genesis 1:2).

God took this fabric of space and had to remold it in those six days, so God gave the darkness a new dimension, which was functional by the physical laws.

On The Seventh Day, God observed His creative work

and felt it was very good (Genesis 1:31). He was ready to take man out of the darkness (as a shadow) into His glorious light so, eventually, everyone can become like God, as His Sons.

FROM DAY ONE

God gave His light on Day One. The model, or shadow of making man in His image, demanded humanity must first seek and love God, so mankind could perhaps for the first time – realize liberty.

Out of God's great love, earthly time has not been set in stone. (Request the free book, *Prophecy Is Cyclical*). Prophecy is based upon free choice and continually repeating itself. Prophecy, to be true, must be history, or true facts.

Humanity, and the entire universe, is like a hologram. Without light, you could not see it. You would only have your "spirits" exist without physical form. That is why Jesus said, "flesh" is "flesh" (corrupt) and "Spirit" is "Spirit." They are diametrically opposites. One is temporary, the other is eternal.

AN ETERNAL MYSTERY

God's mind is so superior that His ways and capabilities are unending. Once you have God's love, He accepts you, not only to be a Son of His, but a friend as well. God is reproducing Himself. You are to become like Him in His "image." This is an eternal quest which requires you to begin by loving Him and His Son. As

you mature, you will begin to know “*The Mind and Ways of God.*”

Why does God choose to reproduce Himself? Is it because He is lonely? No! God’s love must share and do good works, just like Jesus.

God, being The Greatest of The Ages, serves the most to those He created. That is why “*love*” fulfills *The Law* (Romans 13:10). God not only shares His love, but always gives heavenly gifts to those He loves (Ephesians 1:3). He loves those who repent of their human ways and want to obey Him.

In turn, those loved of God, love Him and choose to give Him gifts, as well. Scientifically, known as “*collateral intellect.*”

Once you have God’s love and attempt never doing harm to God, or His creation, you will benefit. Your gifts, invented by your own free choice, will be good works for everyone all the time.

Seeking God – His “*will*” (desire) and “*word*” through Christ, only multiplies God’s goodness for you. Evolution has no goals and are useless to follow.

It will be an Eternal Paradise. Just to know who God is and continually discovering His greatness, will constantly reveal new mysteries. Joy and peace will be “*Eternal.*” When God is “*All In All*” then He, under *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth*, will be the most jubilant (I Corinthians 15:28). There are no spec-

tacular words, or fantastic explanations, which can possibly explain the experiences you will have in *The New Millennium*. God has a perfect world waiting for you – make your reservations – now.

THE JUBILEE

BASIC TRUTH – VOL. XIV

PART 7

BY

ART MOKAROW

Copyright Pending – *THE JUBILEE*

Puzzles – Vol. I

God's Puzzle Solved

God's Puzzle Completed

The Mystery of God

Prophecy Is Cyclical

God's Mystery Fulfilled

Image – Vol. II

Sons Of God

The Magi And Christ's Birth

Jesus, The Son Of Man

Testimony Of The Messiah

Babylon – Vol. III

What Is Babylon?

What Is Slavery?

The Eighth Head Of The Beast

The Ten Lost Tribes

The Mark Of The Beast

What Is Idolatry?

Testimony – Vol. IV

Is The Bible Inspired?

The Goodness Of God's Law

The True Churches Of God

Temple – Vol. V

History Of God's Law

The Christian Sabbath

Who Is God?

The Temple Of God

Deception – Vol. VI

God's Old And New Covenant

What's It All About?

Morality And Economics

The Times Of The Gentiles

Satan's Deception

Worship – Vol. VII

God's Work

The Original Bible

Discovering God

Faith With Works

God's Plan Of Salvation

Spiritual Growth

Faith That Saves

Prophecy – Vol. VIII

Revelation Uncovered

The Great Apostasy

God's Story

History Of Revelation

Teaching – Vol. IX

The Wisdom Of Jesus And Solomon

God's School

God's Science Vs. Human Science

Works – Vol. X

What Is Man?

Morality – Pathway To Economic Prosperity

Don't Bury Your Talents

God's Work Vs. Man's Work

Other Books

Christ In You

The White Throne Judgment

God's Sabbath And Holy Days

God's Will

Satan's Image

God's Kingdom

The Wedding Feast

God's Two Priesthoods

Truths, Creeds And Doctrines

Who Is The Messiah?

Solomon's Temple Pillars

Paul's Religion

Who And What Is God's Word?

What Is A Marriage?

Lake Of Fire – The Judgment

Chronology Of Christ

The End Is The Beginning

Origin Of Baptism

Revelation And The Queen Of Heaven

Seeking God

The Jubilee

God's Three Covenants

All rights reserved. No part of the material protected by this copyright notice may be reproduced or utilized in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any informational storage system without written permission from the copyright owner. Printed in The United States of America.

CONTENTS

PREFACE	<i>vii</i>
INTRODUCTION	<i>ix</i>
SHOUTS OF JOY	1
THE NEW MOON	7
THE LAW OF JUBILEE	13
THE KINGDOM OF GOD	19
GOD THE CREATOR	25
CHRIST – THE PROPHET	31
THE GLORY OF GOD	37
MADE IN THE IMAGE OF GOD	43
KINGDOM OF GOD WITHOUT END	49
THE MIND OF GOD	55

PREFACE

There is an unknown *Biblical* Holy Day (The Year of The Feast of Jubilee). This special Sabbath rest is little known. Less is taught about this Holy Day than all the rest of God's Holy days. Why? How can people seek and choose which Holy Days to keep and avoid others?

In reality, it is the most important of all The Holy Days for the whole world, including The Jews and The Gentiles.

Read the book, *God's Sabbath And Holy Days*. This book covers the vital importance of God's Holy Days for every human being who has ever existed and will exist in the future.

No money is accepted for this book. You could use any extra funds you have to help the orphans, widows and those truly hungry. Any comments and criticisms will be appreciated. We are all learning God's *word* and, through diligent study, are able to help one another.

We offer three CDs which allow you to read all the books on your computer. CD #1: Vol. I – Vol. VIII; CD #2: All other books not included in a volume; CD #3: Articles on various subjects. We also have a DVD with Art's comments on each published book. The DVD and CDs are free.

**Address: Art Mokarow, P.O. Box 1197, Montgomery, TX 77356
Email: art@mokarow.com (Comments and Questions)
Websites: www.GodsPuzzleSolved.com (Free books can be downloaded)
www.BibleStudyMadeEasy.net (Christian articles)**

INTRODUCTION

Christ said, “*flesh is flesh*” and “*spirit is spirit*” (John 3). The two entities are different and function opposite each other.

The flesh, a human body, is composed of dust or earth. The spirit is of heaven. Both have separate creations and purposes. The laws for each have different functions and purposes. The flesh is temporary and dies. The spirit is eternal like God. The Laws that govern flesh and spirit are vastly different and are enemies of each other, since one has the goal to die and the other has the goal to live forever. Death is the end of flesh. It begins from nothing and ends as nothing.

PARADISE

Spirit, however, can dwell in Paradise. *The flesh* is temporary and *the spirit* is unending. God made two types of laws for each to follow. *The Old Covenant* is for those who are physical and will not be in the physical Paradise. They obey *The Law of Moses* for a successful physical life.

The *spiritual* law is known as *The New Covenant*. It's followers will enter a spiritual Paradise and remain there forever.

Paradise, whether *temporal* or *spiritual*, is when one is in God's rest, free of stress. This Paradise is called The Promised Land. This Promised Land is where God dwells with His people, physically or *spiritually*, cares for all of their needs and offers security. God, as King, is completely in charge and is The Greatest Ser-

vant of all. God has created all of mankind and loves each and every person. You, as part of His flock, are also to be His friends.

PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL

***The Old Covenant* was only given to Israel, but Gentiles could become citizens of the *physical* Promised Land by keeping *The Law of Moses* (Deuteronomy 5:3).**

Christ brought *The New Covenant*, which included everyone (the whole world) and was predicated upon the *spiritual* intent of *The Law* and a *spiritual* rest (Jeremiah 31:31). The spirit of *The Law* was built on a foundation of love, while *The Old Covenant* was built on a foundation of fear.

The letter or the command of *The Law* required human effort and works. The spirit of *The Law* was completely based on faith with God, through Christ, doing the work.

GOD'S HOLY SPIRIT

***Spiritually*, keeping God's law by faith means *God is doing the work through His Holy Spirit* (II Timothy 1:7). God's Holy Spirit is all of God's power, love and His sound mind of wisdom.**

The Holy Spirit leads you to the truth (John 14:26). The truth is The Word of God (John 17:17). God's Word is Christ, His First Begotten Son. Christ, therefore, is the one who has all of God's truth without measure (John 3:34). Jesus, knowing the truth, exercised complete faith without any sin, which proves

His Messiahship. Therefore, all He said and did was God's work, "*This is the word of God, that you believe on him whom he has sent*" (Luke 1:35). God sent His Holy Spirit from heaven and Jesus, The Son of Man, accepted it in full measure from His birth.

BOOKS WITHOUT END

Jesus, being the complete Word of God, had no end to what He said or did, "*And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world itself could not contain the books that should be written. Amen*" (John 21:25). Why? God backed Jesus every step of the way, and He knew every word of God.

Since Christ spoke every Word of God regarding the *spiritual New Covenant*, you must look to His words for details about *The New Covenant* which encompasses The Feast of Jubilee. "*The feast days are a shadow of good things to come*" (Colossians 2:17). His words are prophecy.

The Old Covenant Jubilee is written in Leviticus 25. The Spiritual Jubilee is without end through Christ, "*Let no man therefore judge you in meat or drink, or in respect of an holy day, or of the new moon, or of the Sabbath day, which are a shadow [type] of things to come [prophecy]*" (Colossians 2:16).

The Old Covenant with The Holy Days was only a prophecy of "*better things to come.*" Read Leviticus 25 concerning The Keeping of The Holy Days in The Letter. It was only a shadow of future prophecy. The Feast of Jubilee, therefore, has an *Old Covenant* as-

pect of *The Law* with human works and a *New Covenant spiritual* aspect kept through faith in God's Holy Spirit. The future Jubilee is almost too good for words, and it is Eternal in God's loving Paradise.

CHAPTER 1

SHOUTS OF JOY

“Jubilee” in Hebrew announces “such joy and happiness” that it almost damages your hearing. Your exhilaration is so intense you harm your hearing capability. Jubilee is truly The Horn of Plenty overwhelming your wildest desires and hopes.

LIBERTY AT LAST

You were, initially, created in vanity, like any creature or animal, with no purpose or hope. Such a creation was intended in God’s plan (Romans 8:20), “*Because the creature itself also shall be delivered from the bondage [slavery] of corruption [to die] into the glorious liberty of the children of God*” (Romans 8:21). This liberty comes through Christ, The Word of God. To be a child of God as His Son, you have to be set free from slavery and your debts have to be paid. It is a Jubilee, “*And if children, then heirs; heirs of God and joint heirs with Christ; if so be that we suffer with him, that we may also be glorified [dressed in God’s goodness] together” (Romans 8:17).*

You began like animals, struggling to live with no purpose (but death). Through Christ, you have hope and faith and are engulfed in a new body, exactly like God, “*For I reckon that the sufferings [pain, survival] of this*

present time are not worthy to be compared with the glory which shall be revealed to us. For the earnest expectation of the creature [animal] waits for the manifestation of the sons of God” (Romans 8:19). There is your “Jubilee Year.”

EARTHLY BECOMES HEAVENLY

How does this transition come to pass? Christ outlined what you should pray, “*After this manner therefore pray you: Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be your name. Your kingdom come. Your will [desire] be done on earth, as it is in heaven [both the same]. Give us this day our daily bread. And forgive us our debts, as we forgive our debtors. And lead us not into temptation [debt, sin] but deliver us from evil [harm]: For yours is the kingdom, [in God’s image] the power, [Holy Spirit] and the glory [God’s goodness] *for ever. Amen”* (Matthew 6:9-13).*

This prayer is nothing more than a description of the meaning of The Feast of Jubilee. You are to, daily, pray for The Feast of Jubilee to come to pass. It is *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth*.

Now, you know the meaning of The Feast of Jubilee. *The Old Covenant* describes a prophecy, or a *shadow* of better things to come. *The New Covenant* through Christ is that prophecy fulfilled. Jesus said, He did not come to destroy *The Law* or The Prophets until all is fulfilled in The Kingdom of God (Matthew 5:16-19). Christ came to complete The Prophets and *The Law*.

The Law is a shadow of better things to come, which include perfection in The Kingdom of God (Hebrews 10:1). You also need to be “In Christ and His Rest,” “Come to me, all you that labour [struggle] and are heavy laden [in debt] and I will give you rest [Sabbath]. Take my yoke [struggle, cross] upon you [slave] and lowly in heart [like child] and you shall find rest [Sabbath] to your souls [lives]. For my yoke [slavery] is easy and my burden [debt] is light” (Matthew 11:28-30). You are to be “In Christ” which is His Sabbath Rest. “Christ In You” is your Sabbath’s Rest – Eternally. This Seventh Day is Eternal in God’s Kingdom.

Messianic Jews and Gentile Christians are already in God’s Rest through Christ. As long as you remain faithful like your Messiah you are in The Jubilee and will be clothed in God’s glory when you are resurrected as The Bride of Christ (Revelation 19:7-9).

At the time of The Wedding Feast, you will be blessed. (Request the free book, *The Wedding Feast*). This will be a time of joy, shouting and singing, “*And a voice came out of the throne [angels], saying, Praise our God, all you his servants [slaves] and you that fear him both small and great. And I heard as it were the voice of a great multitude [jubilee] and as the voice of mighty thunders, saying, Alleluia: for the LORD God omnipotent reigns. Let us be glad and rejoice and give honour to him: for the marriage of the lamb [jubilee] is come and his wife [not a bride] has made herself ready*” (Revelation 19:5-7).

Clearly, this is the time of The Jubilee when The Wed-

ding Feast is to take place. John wrote about when this takes place, “*And I saw a new heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven and the first earth were passed away; and there was no more sea. And I John saw the holy city, New Jerusalem, coming down from God out of heaven, prepared as a bride adorned for her husband*” (Revelation 21:1-2). *The New Heavens and The New Earth* are one and the time of Jubilee has come to pass.

Shouting, praise and joy will resound because The Prophets and *The Law* have been completed. It will be a time of eternal joy and happiness in God’s Rest, because The Jubilee is a reality.

THEN WHAT?

What happens in The Jubilee (The Wedding Feast)? What do God’s Sons, with Christ and The Father, accomplish during *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth*?

Leviticus 25 outlines the events during The Wedding Feast. The Sabbath Day of God’s Rest has been forgotten, as well as The Jubilee.

The Sabbath Day has been left alone more than The Feast of Jubilee. Read, again, what Paul wrote to describe The Holy Days, “*Let no man therefore judge you in meat or in drink or in respect of an holy day or of the new moon or the sabbath days*” (Colossians 2:16).

“*The New Moon*” and “*The Sabbaths*” are on the same

plane, as prophecy and both refer to a future in the *rest of God*.

Christians and Messianic Jews, in *The Rest of Christ*, are *The Bride of Christ*. They have a prophetic meaning having to do with *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth*.

Just as The Jubilee has been forgotten by theologians, likewise, so has The New Moon.

CHAPTER 2

THE NEW MOON

The new moon was used to calculate The Holy Days and God's Sabbaths (Leviticus 25:1-10, Exodus 23:15 and 34:18). When God's people, Israel, was released from slavery in Egypt, the night their freedom started was known as "A Night To Be Remembered."

NIGHT TO BE REMEMBERED

Why was Israel's release considered a "*Night To Be Remembered?*" Israel was God's people. The Hebrew word for month (Hodesh) literally means New Moon. The new moon is "*Abib,*" meaning the first month. It was used as a measurement of time to identify The Holy Days and when God's people received liberty. When Israel sinned at Mount Sinai by worshipping The Golden Calf, God changed the sign for God's people to keep the weekly Seventh Day Sabbath. They would no longer be allowed into God's Promised Land. They had to prove they were worthy, "*And remember that you were a servant [slave] in the land of Egypt and that the LORD, your God brought you out thence through a mighty hand and by a stretched out arm: therefore the LORD your God commanded you to keep the Sabbath*" (Deuteronomy 5:15). This rewriting of *The Law* brought a new change, which was the

sign of keeping The Sabbath. They kept The Seventh Day Sabbath to remind them that they were entering God's Land totally free. It was a Paradise like The Garden of Eden (Exodus 20).

When God's people sinned, "*The Night To Be Remembered*" was changed. They could no longer live in freedom or have liberty. Now, they were tried and tested in the wilderness and struggled to survive. They were no longer free to do whatever they wanted.

The Holy Days were counted monthly when a new moon conveyed a new start. On Passover, God pardoned their sins and did not kill their firstborn as He did with The Egyptians. The new moon revealed when these prophecies began.

The Seven Days of "*The Feast of Unleavened Bread*" cleansed them, so they could receive God's Rest in Paradise. At Pentecost, God, by His *grace*, gave them His Holy Spirit to learn the truth. Trumpets would give them The Kingdom of God. On The Day of Atonement, all their sins were forgiven. During The Feast of Tabernacles, God will dwell with them for a thousand years, or The Millennium, before *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth*. Wow!

Each new month, when they started a feast day, God would make them His Sons in His Eternal Kingdom of Paradise. The Holy Days and "New Moons" brought them a step closer to an Eternal Paradise of liberty. A moon has a dark side and a light side. Each Holy Day (month) represents a step closer to God's light. In

God, there is only light and no darkness (I John 1:5).

Every new moon and every Holy Day saw the people of God growing closer to being “In His image,” “*But to you that fear my name shall the sun of righteousness arise with healing in his wings; and you shall go forth and grow up as calves [cattle] of the stall. And you shall tread down the wicked for they shall be ashes under the soles of your feet [conquer] in the day that I shall do this, said the LORD of hosts [armies]*” (Matthew 4:2-3).

This change was the beginning of The Millennium, as Zechariah foretold (Zechariah 9:10-17). Malachi declared that when “The Sun of Righteousness comes,” He will have healing in His wings. What wings? “*He [God] shall cover you with his feathers, and under his wings [angels] shall you trust, his truth shall be your shield and buckler*” (Psalm 91:4). (Verse 11 defines these protectors as angels).

“*The Sun*” is The Messiah and “*The Moon*” is *His Bride*. The Bride is still human and receives God’s help through Christ, The Groom. The Moon, Christ’s Bride, is human and, therefore, half-good and half-evil. The moon is in both darkness and light and the reflection from the sun portrays Christ. The moon’s shadow in the dark is human nature, which is weak.

The Apostle John, in Revelation, writes about this prophecy, “*And there appeared a great wonder in heaven [stars]: a woman [Mary] clothed with the sun [God and Christ, The Groom] and the moon under her feet and upon her head a crown of twelve stars*” (Rev-

elation 12:1). This is symbolic.

Malachi reveals that “The Sun of Righteousness” is coming. The Sun (Christ) covers the woman and she has the moon under her feet, which means to conquer, or overcome, human nature. She is wearing “*the twelve stars*” as “*a crown of royalty*” (Malachi 4:1-6). These twelve stars are angels, the wings protecting Christ. Israel is ready for the birth of a child (Revelation 12:2). She has intense labor pains, which reveal “*the tribulation of a man child to come*” (Isaiah 66:6-10). There are seven angels over the seven churches (Revelation 1:20).

Satan, along with one-third of the stars (angels), fought against the birth of Christ. His birth has many false labor pains which delay the growth of His Bride. Historically, King Herod tried to kill Christ and all The Israeli children under two. Fortunately, Christ was willing to die to protect all the children, the babies and children born after Him (eventually). Herod died before all the babies were killed.

Christ was born and, with His works, “*The Church of God*” emerged. Satan is constantly pursuing the bride of Christ to destroy her. She is protected in the wilderness, but those not growing in the love of Christ go into tribulation (Revelation 12:14-17).

MOON AND HOLY DAYS

The Holy Days and The Sabbaths are described as “*a shadow of prophecy to come.*” At their conclusion, The

Holy Days lead to *rest* “In The Kingdom of God” (Colossians 2).

The *new moons* include The Messianic Jews and The Gentile Christians who become The Bride of Christ (Revelation 7). The keeping of The Holy Days and *the new moons* is commanded because it represents how God makes you in His *image*, as Sons of God.

These Holy Days and *new moons* in *The Old Covenant* are required, in order to keep every aspect of God’s Law, so His people can come “*to Christ*” (James 2:10). If one keeps The Sabbath Days, they must also keep The New Moon.

Once Jesus introduced *The New Covenant*, *The Law* is kept in your hearts. God’s Holy Days are now manifested by God’s Holy Spirit (John 16:13). His Rest is much easier to keep since it is predicated upon love. Jesus told the rich man, He loved him, because he kept all of God’s Commandments. However, he had an idol because “*the love of money*” or “*mammon*” was his physical “god.” The Messiah told him, if he sold what he had and gave the money to the poor, he would become perfect. The rich man could not sell his goods, even though he kept God’s Commandments. Your Savior told him, he had to love God first and, if he did, God would teach him God’s love. Only God can change you *spiritually* (Matthew 19:26).

Keeping *The Old Covenant* and *The Law of Moses* “*to the letter*” will lead you to Christ (Galatians 3:24-25). Once you are in Christ’s “*Rest*,” as long as you remain

faithful, you will grow in The Love of God which completes *The Law* (Romans 13:10). Love never harms God or His creation.

You need to resolve the issue of how God changes everyone who has not grown *spiritually* (God's Spirit) through His great love. The Jubilee Feast, as well as the other feasts, are "shadows" and prophecy of better things to come.

You need The New Moon, which concludes God's *work* of making you in His *image*. The Feast of Jubilee clearly defines how God becomes all in all. The New Moon begins a new prophecy.

CHAPTER 3

THE LAW OF THE JUBILEE

A time of joy and happiness is depicted by “*the works*” of The Jubilee Sabbath Rest. You are about to discover The Feast of The Jubilee is kept every fiftieth year which is a time of elation and praise for God. This shadow predicts a future prophecy in Christ.

LAW ONE

The fiftieth year begins on the tenth day of the seventh month. The tenth day is The Day of Atonement. On The Day of Atonement the sins of everyone are pardoned. It is a day of rest like any Sabbath.

“*Rest*” means “no work or labor.” This day has a multitude of blessings. It truly is a Paradise.

The Jubilee predicts the future with “*The New Heavens*” and “*The New Earth*” united in perfect harmony – which is heaven on earth. That is exactly what the prayer of Christ said. The Kingdom of God will come on earth. God dwells with man.

The Temple of God, “*the tabernacle*,” will be on earth (Revelation 21:3). Wow! This truly is a “*Jubilee*” and a time of praise, singing and shouting.

LAW TWO

When you have “*liberty*,” you have “*complete free choice*.” An individual can enjoy this feast, as they choose, without the need to earn money. It is a day of pleasure and all possessions of man will be returned to them as an inheritance, which is truly a gift.

This Feast has a double inheritance with the forgiveness of personal debt and the forgiveness of all other sins. How awesome! Everyone will be totally free to seek their personal pleasures and desires without work. This is, truly, a gift from God, your Father.

God will provide everything. He will give His inheritance to His family, Christ, The Firstborn and all His adopted Sons (Leviticus 25:11-13).

LAW THREE

Anything bought prior to The Jubilee must be treated like a rental and returned to its maker or owner. Land, houses and property cannot be taken or bought. Estate tax is a serious sin! The right of personal property is a prime principle which God has ordained. Whatever one creates, or originally owned, is theirs as God demands (Psalm 24:1). It is your inheritance from God.

LAW FOUR

Citizens of *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth* cannot oppress or cause harm to each other. God is The Only King and His statutes and judgements must be

kept. Then, His people can dwell safely. Once The Feast of Jubilee is over, everyone begins to work and produce for themselves again (Leviticus 25:22).

LAW FIVE

“If your brother be waxen poor and has sold away some of his possessions and if any of his kin [family] come to redeem it, then he redeems that which his brother sold” (Leviticus 25:25). Families are responsible for their poor family member’s debts.

LAW SIX

If the poor man is able to restore his property, the buyer must pay back the number of years remaining. The buyer must discount the debt from the original price. Inflation is not permitted. Everything must be worth its real value. Inflating currency is a sin.

LAW SEVEN

If a person buys a house in a walled city and he cannot build a business from his property or keep a job, he has a year to redeem his money from the seller.

Opposed to city living, in the country there is enough property to farm or ranch. If he cannot make a living in the city, the buyer can get his money back within the year. If the buyer cannot redeem his money back from the seller, the house remains his forever and it will not be returned in The Jubilee (Leviticus 25:30). Levites can redeem their houses at anytime, because

they have received no inheritance. Only they can receive tithes from the people. Taxes can only be ten percent – never more.

LAW EIGHT

Houses, whether in the city or in *the wilderness*, are returned at The Feast of The Jubilee, because a person or family can earn a living in those areas. A disabled person, or one who cannot work and is so poor, they can do nothing, then, they can receive charity. You should take a person into your house, whether he/she is a stranger or a citizen. By observing a successful person, a person can learn how to make a living.

LAW NINE

No interest can be charged. A fixed price is the norm. The original profit is all a person can make. Compound interest can overwhelm the astute investor by changing *life experiences*. Usury is a sin.

LAW TEN

If a person becomes so poor, then all they can do is sell themselves into slavery. This person must be treated as hired help (Leviticus 25:39-40). Then, as a servant, he is free during The Jubilee Year (Leviticus 25:42-43).

The aliens (The Gentiles without God) can be bought as slaves and become his personal property, forever. Those without God, “Gog” in Hebrew, remain slaves to Israel.

The only exception would be when a Gentile stranger is taken as an inheritance by adoption. They are to become a member of the person's family and be treated as a hired servant, but never considered a slave. A rich stranger can buy a poor citizen, but he can be redeemed by relatives like an uncle or an uncle's son (Leviticus 25:41-54). The poor family member must be freed during The Jubilee.

ONLY ISRAEL IS THE PROPERTY OF GOD

These ten laws regarding The Feast of The Jubilee are Statutes of God. Israel has a special place with God as His people. Israel were slaves in Egypt and God redeemed them. They are the possession of God. The Gentiles chose to rule themselves without God. Strangers, The Gentiles, have *free choice* until they ask God to redeem them like Israel did, "*For to me the children of Israel are servants [slaves], they are my servants whom I brought forth out of Egypt: I am your God*" (Leviticus 25:55).

Israel, by their *free choice*, rejoiced over the night to be remembered. They were excited to have God be their God, when He brought them out of slavery. They wanted God to redeem them as His property.

THE GENTILE SLAVES

The Feast of Jubilee, as wonderful as it is, left The Gentiles to be slaves of The Israelites forever. Until they choose to become Sons of God, they are slaves in darkness.

The Gentiles choose to rule themselves by human reason. Some do not even believe in God. Science, with its false conclusions, is their “god.” Mankind is replacing God and believe they do not need anyone else.

The Jubilee Year provides insights into *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth* regarding what is prophesied. You are ready to put The Prophets and *The Law* together, which is a *shadow* and foretells the future.

CHAPTER 4

THE KINGDOM OF GOD

Christ said, The Kingdom does not come by observation ...behold, the kingdom of God is "within you" (Luke 17:20-21). What did He mean? Many believe The Kingdom of God is *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth*. You are about to find out, this is only partially true (I Corinthians 13:9). Christians, as humans, only know "*in part*" and only prophecy "*in part.*"

JERUSALEM THE MOTHER

Paul wrote where The Kingdom of God originates. In the Heavenly Jerusalem, God and the angels are bringing people to The Messiah (John 1:51). This Heavenly Jerusalem will be under *The New Heavens* and on *The New Earth*. Isaiah said the same thing, "For as the *new heavens* and the *new earth*, which *I will make*, shall remain before me, so shall *your seed* and *your name remain*" (Isaiah 66:22).

"Heavenly Jerusalem" will become The New Jerusalem on earth. Paul said this about The Heavenly Jerusalem, "*But Jerusalem which is above* [heaven] *is free* [liberty, not captive], *which is the mother of us all* [everyone on earth]" (Galatians 4:26). The Heavenly Jerusalem will become *The New Jerusalem* on earth

and the mother of The Sons of God in The Kingdom of God. The Kingdom of God is only for the Sons of God, or the Family of God. One must be like God to be “His Family” and then, they can receive their inheritance.

The Kingdom of God is not a place, because it resides within each person who become the Son of God (in the image of God). As Christ said, The Kingdom of God is not observable, because it “lives” within the person. You must be Sons of God or “In The Image of God” in order to be in His Kingdom. That is “Christ In You.”

The New Earth is not The Kingdom. Only *New Jerusalem* is “*the city of peace.*” Those who dwell in New Jerusalem are The Sons of God.

“The Twelve Pearly Gates” represent The Twelve Tribes of Israel who will, once again, be first to enter the city of God, New Jerusalem. The converted Gentiles are the last to become Sons of God during The Millennium. Israel was originally first, became “last” and, once again, will become “first.” To The Jew “*first*” and then to The Gentile, as Jesus said (John 4:22).

GUESTS

Guests, when invited to the home of someone, do not live there and are not considered a part of the family. They are not, as of yet, Sons of God. John describes who they are, “*And the dragon was wroth* [enraged] *with the woman* [church] *and went to make war with*

the remnant of her seed [human family], *which keeps the commandments of God and have the testimony* [witness] *of Jesus Christ*" (Revelation 12:17).

The Messianic Jews believed "*In Christ*" as The Messiah and believed they must keep *The Commandments* to the letter (works). However, because they kept *The Old Covenant*, they did not grow *spiritually* to be like Christ in the *image* of God.

Gentiles who believe in Jesus and *The Law of Moses* are like The Messianic Jews. However, they have not become *perfect* to be *The Bride of Christ*. They can be guests at The Wedding Feast and will have to grow in the *glory* of God (God's *goodness*) (Matthew 5:48 and Exodus 33), "*And the nations of them which are saved shall walk in the light [Christ] of it: and the kings of the earth do bring their glory [goodness] and honour in it*" (Revelation 21:24).

These are all the guests from other nations, who came to honor God and His family, as nobles. The kings bring all their glory and goodness, or profit, which their families produced.

To be in The Kingdom of God, they must be nobility, as Sons of God. These gifts are *Spiritual*, since the physical things burned in The Lake of Fire. Those burned had their flesh destroyed, but the spirit remains. Only the wise virgins, growing in The Holy Spirit, can be "The Bride" (Matthew 25). Others can enter "*New Jerusalem*" as "*guests*" only. They are "*the unwise virgins.*" They need to become Sons of God.

There is one more group on *The New Earth*. Christ foretells, this group will see Abraham, Isaac and Jacob in The Kingdom. However, they will be weeping and gnashing their teeth in outer darkness (God's prison) (Matthew 8:11-12). They lacked faith in God and Christ (Matthew 8:10).

Jude 12-13 reveals, they are “*twice dead*.” The first death is appointed to all men (Hebrews 9:27) and the second death will be in The Lake of Fire. They end up in outer darkness, as Jude foretold. There are those in the fire that Christians should try to save. They are called spots by Christians, “feasts of charity” (love) (Jude 23). They are murderers and liars, like Cain, who followed Baal for self-profit rather than becoming like Christ (Jude 11).

NEW HEAVEN AND EARTH

***The New Earth* is, merely, a new beginning and not the end. (Request the free book, *The End Is The Beginning*). You are back to The Garden of Eden where Adam and Eve lost access to The Tree of Life. In The Garden where God dwelt, He lives with man again to continue what He started.**

Adam was a figure of “*the first Christ*” (Romans 5) and, now, The Promised Seed – Christ – is the second Adam and High Priest, who is called Melchizedek in The Kingdom of God.

New Jerusalem will, now, be The Queen of Heaven, “*The Mother of All*.” New Jerusalem hosts The Wed-

ding Feast. The Jubilee is a time of joy and elation because all debts and sins are forgiven on The Day of Atonement.

The sins of those who had to go into The Lake of Fire were purged by the death of their flesh. This is Christ's baptism of fire. Sin is destroyed (I Corinthians 15:44-47 and 15:55-57). (Request the free book, *Lake Of Fire – The Judgment*).

New Jerusalem with The Tree of Life – God's Holy Spirit – is available to all who thirst. Jesus is, now, “*The Alpha*” and “*The Omega*” with a new beginning, “*I am alpha and omega, the beginning and the end, first and last*” (Revelation 22:13).

As the revelation ends, Jesus made this statement, “*And, behold, I come quickly: and my reward is with me to give every man [the world] according as his work shall be*” (Revelation 22:12).

The end result is Salvation and becoming a Son of God in The Kingdom of God. Anyone who is thirsty, even in outer darkness, can be rewarded by becoming Sons of God, “*And the [Holy] Spirit and the bride [New Jerusalem] say, Come. And let him that hears [preach] say, Come. And let him that is athirst come. And whosoever will [potential], let him take the water of life freely*” (Revelation 22:17). This verse has a dual meaning. John, completing *The Book of Revelation*, announces those preaching in his day along with the future coming of Christ will be drinking the healing waters that flow out of the throne God in *The New Heavens* and

on *The New Earth*. However this is explicit. This is The Holy Spirit and The Bride in The Kingdom of God. New Jerusalem refers to anyone who has access to the living waters with the leaves healing the nations (world) (Revelation 22:2).

Christ will reward the world according to their works.

New Jerusalem is "*The Kingdom*" and The Bride is now the wife of Christ. It is time for them to have children who will come from outer darkness. The guests continue growing in the *glory* of God and His *goodness*. The Bride is now His wife as part of The Family of God.

What happens in outer darkness?

CHAPTER 5

GOD – THE CREATOR

Jesus makes a startling comment by saying those who call any person a fool is in danger of Hell Fire (gehenna) (Matthew 5:22). This is dangerous. Then, He said, if one comes to the Temple for forgiveness (offering a gift – sacrifice), he should ask his brother for forgiveness first, before God accepts the gift to heal the harm that was done.

If not, that person goes into The Lake of Fire. Wow! Jesus, then, gives the penalty for those thrown into The Lake of Fire, “*Agree with your adversary quickly, while you are in the way [to court] with him; lest at any time [one dies] the adversary deliver you to the judge and the judge deliver you to the officer [police] and you be cast into prison [outer darkness]. Verily I say to you, you shall by no means come out thence [Lake of Fire] till you have paid the uttermost farthing*” (Matthew 5:25-26). The flesh of those The Lake of Fire is destroyed (they are alive as spirits).

GOD LOVES WORK

When a man was healed on The Sabbath at the Pool of Bethesda, Jesus gave credit to His Father, “*My father works hitherto and I work*” (Matthew 5:17). God and Christ work on The Sabbath. Christ made an amaz-

ing statement, “*Verily, verily I say to you the son can do nothing of himself, but what he sees the father do for what things soever he does, these also does the son likewise*” (Matthew 5:19).

The miracle of healing was done by God. Jesus had the faith and knew The Father would do the actual healing. God is The Creator and does all the work. God is a Creator by nature.

Notice what Paul wrote, “*Blessed be the God and father of our LORD Jesus Christ, who has blessed us with all spiritual blessings in heavenly places in Christ*” (Ephesians 1:3).

God, in Heaven keeps producing *spiritual* miracles like healing. *Spiritual* growth gives life and God does the work. God wants you to have life in Paradise rather than death.

THE OLD AND THE NEW COVENANT

The Bible consists of *The Old* and *The New Covenant*. *The Old Covenant* was the beginning of the work of God with His chosen people, because of the promise by God with Abraham.

Israel was God’s first family and, as their Father, He taught them at their level of understanding. As a *perfect* Rabbi, He knew they had a wrong heart, so He started with *The Commandments*, “*Do not touch the hot stove – do not cross the street unless I am with you – do not play in the garden unless you tell me.*”

When they were released from Egypt, only little children. *The Commandments*, statutes and judgments were extremely strict and had grievous penalties for the smallest infraction. They had to be kept perfectly. After all, they had to deal with life and death. It was as if The Tribes of Israel were in military school and had to follow strict rules.

On the other hand, in *The New Testament*, *The New Covenant* was introduced only to those who had a right heart and were teachable. Those who wanted to learn were taught by *The New Covenant*. The Gentiles had more faith and desire and became the first teachable students of God, “*When Jesus heard it, he marvelled and said to them that followed, Verily I say to you, I have not found so great faith, no, not in Israel*” (Matthew 8:10).

Now you know why the first converted and baptized Gentile was a Centurion (Acts 10). *The New Covenant* was and is, only, for people who want to be taught and will, faithfully, listen.

Moses brought *The Law* to *The Old Testament*, but “*grace*” and “*truth*” came through Jesus Christ (John 1:17). Those under *The New Covenant* receive *mercy*, because they want to be taught and are faithful.

Jeremiah, in *The Old Testament*, foretold of this change of heart, “*In those days they [Israel and Gentiles] shall not say no more, the fathers have eaten a sour grape and the children’s teeth are set on edge. But everyone shall die for his own iniquity, every man that eats the*

sour grapes, his teeth shall be set on edge” (Jeremiah 31:29-30).

Israel blamed their Fathers of Old for causing them to be in captivity. As always, the guilty are responsible for their own sins, but they see themselves as victims. They felt their fathers were guilty and caused their present troubles, however, they followed in their fathers’ footsteps.

Christ said, they lacked faith in God. Jeremiah continued and said this would change. Each person should blame themselves for their trouble. Christ started with the healing of The Gentiles and a Centurion opened *The New Covenant* as Jeremiah foretold (Jeremiah 31:31-35). The Gentiles will seek God and enter His *rest* first (Isaiah 11:10). Wow!

Jesus asks Israel to enter His *Rest*. Christ declared that many Jews and Gentiles shall be in The Kingdom with Abraham, Jacob and Isaac, but Israel shall be cast out into outer darkness (Matthew 8:11-12).

WHERE IS OUTER DARKNESS?

Always remember, God makes all things (Hebrews 3:4). God is The One who does the work through His Holy Spirit. God, continually, creates the universe and it keeps growing.

Human science has discovered, the universe keeps growing in the space of outer darkness. New stars continue to be born at the edge of the universe. Stars

are angels as Revelation 1:20 states. They are lights in the darkness of space. The universe is not dying, but keeps expanding. You, too, are to be lights of the world (Matthew 5:14). You are to be like the angels, who are spirits and God, giving off light.

Outer darkness is the prison of God, which is located at the end of space and is pulled back into the darkness. In Mythology, this is called, “*The God Demeiurge*” – gravity.

The power of The Holy Spirit makes those in darkness, become a new star, which is a sun with planets. God tells you, the visible universe reveals who He is and His Works by His Holy Spirit. That is why Jesus said, he would draw all men to Him (John 12:32). In Greek, “to draw” means to drag or pull.

Those in outer darkness are the new potential Sons of God, wailing and gnashing their teeth. Ahead is only death, which was their choice. *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth* is a Jubilee with The Gentile servants. They are slaves in the prison of outer darkness, forever, until they choose to repent and come from outer darkness.

CHAPTER 6

CHRIST – THE PROPHET

God will send a Prophet like Moses in the last days to Save The World (Deuteronomy 18). How will you know this Prophet is The True Prophet of God, who will deliver the people of God, Israel?

TRUE AND FALSE

This is rather simple to understand. Many do not realize Jesus came as a Prophet. What was His focus? Christ came to show His servants how to be witnesses of His (Revelation 19:10). Christ came to restore what was lost, The Garden of Eden with The Tree of Life. As He lived His life, Jesus was witnessing the return of The Jubilee.

“And after these things I heard a great voice of much people in heaven saying, Alleluia [praise the LORD], salvation and glory and honour and power to the LORD our God” (Revelation 19:1). **Babylon, world confusion, ends and Christ, with His saints, witness the *rest* of God which is at hand. The Seventh Trump blasts as joy in heaven is ready to introduce the coming Jubilee during The Millennium. Everyone will praise God and shout for joy.**

What Jesus does and says never ends and it will be like a book being, continually, written (John 21:25). Christ is The Author of Salvation (Hebrews 12:2). The life of

Christ and His words were the words of God and His works were the works of God. He had perfect faith and His saints witnessed all these works. Christ is the author of The Book of Life. The Book of Life is The Marriage Register.

“Prophecy” is “history in advance.” Deuteronomy clearly and simply reveals what the prophet does and preaches, proves he is a True Prophet of God. If not, he is a false prophet.

The Apostles have witnessed The Good News of The Jubilee and have written it down for you in the Four Gospels. *The Law* demands two or three witnesses in a court in order to prove the truth. Jesus and His Apostles are two witnesses so there is one more to come.

Paul writes a peculiar personal desire, *“Follow after love [charity] and desire spiritual gifts, but rather that you may prophesy”* (I Corinthians 14:1). He wrote *“love”* and *“spiritual gifts”* should be, continually, pursued. All the people of God, the church and the congregation, should prophesy.

Jesus prophesied in two ways: through what He said and through His works. You should think about the many individuals who attend church, but their lives show no change.

Love, the way of God, meaning *“agape”* in Greek, is *“an intense desire alone”* with no pay. If one gets paid for doing good works, they have received their reward. No further benefit will be given. Christ, in His life, never

asked for money once. If someone wanted to help, He was grateful, because it showed the true intent of the giver, like the widow who gave her last two mites.

Christ never accepted tithes, because they were for the priests, widows and orphans who had no inheritance. (Request the free book, *God's Two Priesthoods*)

A prophet who follows only The Word of God speaks The Truth of God given to him. When witnessing as a prophet, your behavior and works speak loudly. The Apostle James told you, “*pure religion*” is to give to the widow and the orphan and, not be part of this evil world. You must be saints, or Holy Ones, of God.

***The Law* demands two or three witnesses in court during The White Throne Judgment (I Corinthians 6:1-3).**

PROPHECY AND JUDGMENT

To be a saintly witness, who is truthful and unprejudiced in court, the judge must make sure you will be absolutely reliable and speak only the truth.

Christ and the saints have proven to be True Prophets of God. Both have been tried, found guilty by human justice, but were y innocent even to their death and they have become a perfect witness.

If saints are witnesses at The White Throne Judgment, they cannot be on trial when they are the judges. This is The Supreme Court of God. The other witnesses are not judges, like The Queen of Sheba, The Ninevites (who re-

pented), or even those of Sodom and Gomorrah. They are on trial, but will be shown *mercy*. (Request the free book, *Lake Of Fire – The Judgment*).

When did Christians have their trial at The White Throne Judgment? Christ and Peter have the answer. Just before the trial of Christ, read the trial of judgment for The Bride of Christ, “*Now is the judgment of this world; now shall the prince of this world be cast out*” (John 12:31). The entire world went on trial. The White Throne Judgment never had to occur if the world was tried at that time. Who is not tried?

Satan, without being tried, was already proved unworthy. He and those following him will be tried, later, for a very good reason.

So, who is on trial and being judged from the death of Christ and resurrection? “*For the time is come that judgment must begin at the house of God: and if it first begin as us, what shall the end be of them that obey not the gospel of God*” (I Peter 4:17).

The people of God, The Messianic Jews and The Christians, are on trial today and, if faithful to the death, will be the judges in The White Throne Judgment of the world.

Peter warns, “*Beloved, think it not strange concerning the fiery trial which is to try you, as though some strange thing [pain, suffering] happened to you*” (I Peter 4:12).

The saints, the faithful Holy Ones, have their White Throne Judgment in this life. You, too, are being tried

in The Lake of Fire today. What Lake of Fire? “*I indeed baptize you with water to repentance: but he that comes after me is mightier [Christ] than I, whose shoes I am not worthy to bear: he shall baptize [a death] you with the holy ghost [Spirit] and with fire [burned]*” (Matthew 3:11). Quite clear.

Hell on earth is the life for the people of God right now! By remaining faithful (to the death) like Him, you will be The Bride of Christ along with The Messanic Jews and Christian Gentiles.

You are to be Prophets of God, as Paul said. You, like Jesus, have The Spirit (Holy Spirit) of Prophecy and will witness in court.

The Seventh Trump ends this Mystery of God, “*Christ – In You,*” the Hope of Glory.

CHAPTER 7

THE GLORY OF GOD

Moses was told, the *glory* of God is all the *goodness* of God (Exodus 33). What does that mean?

PHYSICAL AND SPIRITUAL

Someone's glory can have "*physical*" and "*spiritual*" applications. "*Glory*" in Hebrew is "*karod*." This foundational premise is extremely weighty.

"Glory" connotes "abundantly full of what a being is or can do." It is "Almighty," both *spiritually* and *physically*. Obviously, when a being is *spiritual*, it refers to their spiritual powers.

The *goodness* of God has no harming qualities. That is what intense love is all about. *Love* and *goodness* is transferred from one being to another through marriage, which is a unifying of two beings exactly like each other. This is the reproductive process of kind after kind.

HUMAN REPRODUCTION

A male reproduces with a woman by passing his seed, which scientifically, is called sperm. The female, then, nourishes that seed until it matures and a self breath-

ing baby is born. It is the process of having sex and the mixing together of a male and female. Human sex differs from *spiritual* sex.

A human sexual act unifies the male and female by placing the seed of man or sperm into the woman. He is the source of life and the woman has a womb to nourish the fetus until birth.

SPIRITUAL REPRODUCTION

When The Sons of God saw “*the daughters of men*” and saw how beautiful they were, they took them as wives (Genesis 6:2). They could not be angels marrying human women. Angels, as Christ said, cannot marry, “*For when they shall rise from the dead, they neither marry, nor are given in marriage; but are as the angels which are in heaven*” (Mark 12:25). The system of God, reproducing Himself differs greatly from human sexual reproduction. God’s gestation period is not limited by time, as it is with humans. The gestation of God is eternal and limitless time wise.

Angels cannot give life – only God can, “*For as the father has life [eternal] in himself, so has he given to the son to have life [spiritual] in himself*” (John 5:26). “*Angels*” in Hebrew are called “*malek*” or “*a messenger*.” Hebrews 1:14 clearly defines angels as *spiritual* ministers to serve the heirs of Salvation.

Angels cannot have sex with human women, so who were “The Sons of God” who took human wives? The Sons of God are listed in Genesis 5. They came from

Adam and were the men who followed God, just as Noah was a “*Preacher of Righteousness.*” Others married the daughters of men who were drowned in the flood for disobeying Noah’s warning.

God, is The God of the living and not the dead (Mark 12:27). Only God and Christ have the power to give life. All life comes directly from God through Christ. That is *spiritual* reproduction which the angels do not have the ability to do. Christ, as you read, received life from His Father and, now, He can give life.

Angels are spirits and God, by His Holy Spirit, gives “*truth.*” Angels can do the same, but only as messengers. Angels are not The Holy Spirit. The angels of Satan can influence humans, like those who drowned in the flood. Each human who follows God, can, likewise be influenced by His angels, as messengers. The choice is yours.

Noah’s sons, Japheth and Ham married Gentile (strangers) wives. Later, they became world rulers. The first world wide emperor was Nimrod. The angels cannot have human sex with human females. They were merely messengers of Satan influencing the followers of God. They married daughters who were not of God, but of men. These marriages produced giants, or powerful world rulers.

SPIRITUAL INFLUENCE

Good and evil angels persuade or influence, humans to follow one or the other. Humans, like Eve, get tricked

into following Satan and his angels. Spirits are only messengers. *Free choice* is always yours, *What or who do you desire the most in your heart?* Do you have false gods? Are your personal gods the ones you worship?

The Sons of God always put God and His will first (Matthew 12:50). You are brothers and sisters “*In Christ.*” The rest are influenced by Satan, just as he tried with Christ in the wilderness.

Jesus gave a solution for those who always follow God as His Sons, “*It is written, man shall not live by bread alone [self survival] but by every word of God that proceeds out of the mouth of God*” (Matthew 4:4).

The *free choice* is always yours and it depends on what or who you worship. You need to understand, exactly, who your true God is.

God tells you, Jerusalem, which is in heaven is *The Mother* (the womb) of everyone (Galatians 4:26). This mother nourishes you and allows you to have *free choice* to be all you can be. You have been given your specific talents and are to make the most of your potential.

Job 32:8 made you homo sapiens, “*But there is a spirit in man: and the inspiration [influence] of the Almighty [God’s glory] give them understanding.*” When God breathed His breath (“ruach” in Hebrew) into the nostril of Adam, he became the first living soul as a homo sapien. Prior Hominoids and Neanderthals were like other animals who did not intellectually understand.

Godly reproduction has one more step in becoming a complete newborn, Son of God. You are now like a fetus residing in your mother's womb (Jerusalem in heaven).

Paul said, *The Mystery of God* is "*Christ – In You*" (Colossians 1:27). **By living exactly like Christ, The Author of Salvation (Hebrews 12:2), you look forward to receiving The *Glory* of God, which Jesus prayed for you to receive when resurrected (John 17:5).**

While in your flesh, you are naked like Christ and Adam (Genesis 2:25). As any baby in a mother's womb, you are not aware that you are not clothed. The Laodicean Church did not know they were naked, *spiritually*, either. Thinking they were rich and not in need of anything. They thought, they alone had all the "*truth*." While in the womb of your mother (heavenly Jerusalem), you are being *spiritually*, nourished by The Holy Spirit which leads you to the truth. Then, your nakedness can be clothed in "*righteousness*" (John 17:17).

You are ready to be born as Sons of God and be clothed with The *Glory* of God, in all of His *Goodness*, powers and in complete *liberty* (Romans 8:23).

CHAPTER 8

MADE IN THE IMAGE OF GOD

The Jubilee is a time when all debts are forgiven (The Gentile strangers). Does God make The Gentiles in His *image*? The Gentiles are to remain servants forever until death, which is the same in The Kingdom of God.

ONCE DEAD

Because Adam and Eve sinned, humanity lost access to The Tree of Life, which is The Holy Spirit of God. Because of this momentous event, men must die once (Hebrews 9:27).

You will discover, *scripturally*, dying once has many alternatives. Death means nonexistence. The body, your flesh, is only a tabernacle in which you live, temporarily. What is life since your body turns to dust?

Christ is quite specific about death and warns you what death really is and what you should actually fear, “*And fear not them which kill the body, but are not able to kill the soul: but rather fear him [God] which is able to destroy both soul and body in hell*” (Matthew 10:28).

Your Savior, clearly, defines what death is and what you are. “*Apollumi*” in Greek means “*destroy*” and it

can apply to both the *physical* and *spiritual*.

The physical aspect of your life is just “*a tabernacle*” in which to dwell, temporarily. That will be gone one way or another, so do not be afraid.

The soul is, definitely,, able to die depending upon God. Is the soul immortal or not? The Greek word for “soul” is “*psuche*” and it is what you have in common with animals.

Your “*sarx*,” or “*flesh*” in English, is different because you walk upright as homo erectus, but animals generally walk on all fours. Apes are the closest to your way of walking. Either way, animals have souls and are alive, but lack one difference. They do not have a spirit of understanding.

A soul, in itself, is not immortal. God determines exactly how long you live. Your spirit (the word “pneuma” in Greek) is like the wind with internal energy and life.

The “*Spirit – In Man*” is what gives you understanding and is known as human intelligence (Job 32:8). Animals have life and “*psuche*,” or soul, but lack understanding.

You were created a little lower than angels (Psalm 8). How was this done and in what way? Both humans and angels have spirit. Angels are, completely, spirit. In your fleshly bodies, your spirit leaves you when you die (Ecclesiastes 12:6). If God does not intervene with The Holy Spirit, you are left to yourselves in Outer

Darkness.

Angels are spirits and, in the resurrection, you become like the angels. Angels cannot die, because they are all spirit, which is eternal. Humans and angels, both, have *free choice*. That is why angels are in the judgment, as you are.

The spirit has “*life eternal*,” because it is given directly from God’s bosom (John 1:18). This word “*bosom*” in Greek can refer to the past, meaning “*out of God*,” or can refer to the future in the “*ao-rist tense*.” “*Ao-rist*” is conditional meaning a “*free choice*.” It is dependant upon achieving Godly works.

The Spirit of God is life. Angels have understanding like humans, but have different responsibilities as a cherubs, archangels or seraphim. Christ was given, from birth, a full measure of *grace* and *truth* by The Holy Spirit (John 1:14 and 3:34). He always knew the complete truth of God and, therefore, was The Word of God. Angels, like humans, are not given all The Truth, but only “*in part*.”

EARNEST OF INHERITANCE

The Messianic Jews and Christians only receive an earnest of their inheritance. What is an earnest? “*Arrhabon*” in Greek means “*a pledge*,” like giving a down payment with an agreement to pay the rest later. Once you receive the earnest of your inheritance (a down payment), God guarantees, you will not die. You are promised Eternal Life immediately, “*Verily, verily*,

*I say to you, he that hears my word [God's word] and believes on him that sent me has eternal life and shall not come into condemnation [White Throne Judgment] but is passed from death to life" (John 5:25). As long as you remain faithful by free choice, as Christ told you and keep believing His word from God, you cannot and will not die. (Request the free books, *The White Throne Judgment* and *Lake Of Fire The Judgment*).*

Since you only have part of The Holy Spirit, you can only know a part of *truth* and *prophecy*, as Paul told you (I Corinthians 13:9).

No church or denomination has all the truth, since you only know "*in part.*" The Prophets, also, only knew "*in part.*" It is a *free choice* in your heart. Is God first and above everything and everyone in your life, or do you have a "*false god?*" You, yourself can be your own idol.

When you are baptized, it is your death (Romans 5:3-4). However, at the same time, you receive a new life, which can make you eternal.

"*Repentance*" precedes "*baptism,*" as John The Baptist said in reference to The Pharisees (Matthew 3:8). What is repentance? "*Repentance*" in Greek means "*to think differently*" than most humans who are only concerned with their survival. You must want a change of mind, so you can become like Christ (Philippians 2:5). The way of God is to teach you *the truth* and make you in His *image* (Genesis 1:26). Two can walk together as friends when they think alike (Amos 3:3). Chris-

tians and followers of Christ, faithfully, think alike over time when they are glorified like their Messiah (I Corinthians 13:12).

What happens when your body dies? The spirit goes back to God who gave it. Now, besides the spirit in man, you also have The Holy Spirit which cannot die.

When your bodies become dust, you, as spirits, are only asleep (I Corinthians 15:6, 20). You cannot die because you have already died. You are to be clothed with a new garment at the resurrection and be in the *righteousness* of God and His *glory* (Revelation 19:7-8). How simple.

GOD'S SONS

As The Sons of God, you are exactly like Christ, who is like God, your Father, with His complete Holy Spirit and dressed in His *glory*. His *glory* is all of His *goodness*. You are to be in the exact *image* of God. You are all married to God through Christ and The Holy Spirit. You are all Sons of God with Christ, The First Begotten. You are adopted from your human parents to become The True Sons of God.

God has, by His works, His word and by *free choice*, made you into His *image*. Hallelujah!

CHAPTER 9

KINGDOM OF GOD WITHOUT END

The prophecy in Daniel 2 and 8 concerns “*the four world kingdoms*” and “The Kingdom of God” being established.

The Kingdom of God will never be destroyed and will exist forever. It is a Kingdom without end. As you have discovered, it is a Kingdom not observable by sight. It must reside in each person, who is a Son of God (Revelation 21:6-7). Being a Son of God makes you in His *image* and, therefore, you will be royalty in The Kingdom of God. You will inherit the glorious “Jubilee Kingdom” of God by being in the *image* of God.

A KINGDOM OF LIBERTY

Because you are a duplicate of Christ and God, you will inherit the dominion over all the earth and everything in it. Each Son will receive his/her reward according to his/her works (Revelation 22:12). Abraham was the first to receive “*the covenant*” of blessings through his seed (Genesis 22:18).

In the genealogy of Abraham, there was Isaac, Jacob King David and, finally, Christ. In each case, complete *free choice* was given. As The Sons of

God, you must have complete *liberty*, just as your Father has.

GOD'S TEACHING METHODS

Christians tend to think of their works as doctrines. The doctrines of God are organic, ever growing and changing according to each person's growth and heart. God, therefore, deals with and teaches each individual, personally, according to their heart's desires and their level of understanding.

God diversifies His teaching methodology with each man and rewards each person, individually. Ultimately, everyone will have their chance for Salvation, but your rewards in The Kingdom of God may vary. He leaves no child (student disciple) behind.

***The Bride of Christ* will produce different types of works than "*the guests*" at The Wedding Feast, which is a Jubilee. "*The guests*" must grow continually and, bring their "*works of glory*" into The Kingdom of God, annually (Revelation 21:24).**

Finally, God has one more group who have to qualify for The Kingdom of God. In The Lake of Fire, their bodies are destroyed and they become *spirits*, but they are still naked. They are like Satan and his angels. That is why Satan and his angels must be judged as well (I Corinthians 6:3). They are imprisoned in outer darkness like the stars. Jude states, they are like wandering stars in outer darkness (Jude 13).

WANDERING STARS

***Stars* are *suns* and, in order to mature, they must produce planets, like the sun and the moon with the planets. Stars, to mature, must become galaxies with continued growth.**

When a black hole at the end of space explodes, everything is destroyed and there is nothing left, or is there? Dark space (outer darkness) has, scientifically, been proven to have matter. This matter has a weaker gravity than the existing suns.

This matter, with the elements within it, develops into new suns and the universe, literally, expands. A whole new sun emerges out of outer darkness. This transitional period from darkness to light is exactly what transpired on the first day (Matthew 5). God said, let there be “*light*” and He saw that the light was *good*.

The complete “*farthing*” has been paid which releases this imprisoned *darkness* into the *goodness* of God. The potential to receive The Glory of God is available to *the guests* who, annually, bring their “*glory*” to God.

The repentant individual in outer darkness, but afterwards in God’s light, can *spiritually* grow by drinking *the healing waters* of The Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit leads this new baby “*In Christ*” to maturity just like Christ and God. They become *The Bride* of Christ (Revelation 22:17).

POTENTIAL ETERNITY

Since The Kingdom of God is forever, its growth is eternal. The Godhead, all that God is and can be, is revealed by the physical universe (Romans 1:20).

The universe is physical. It functions and continually grows by all the physical laws. The darkness is a set of conflicting laws unlike your physical system. Dark matter has a completely different way of functioning, like a different dimension. These laws function in contradiction to the physical universe.

“*Eternity*” is forever or continual. “*Science*” believes there are at least eleven dimensions, each with potential ability. Each dimension has their own set of laws and purposes.

God, who builds all things, can build whatever He chooses. The Godhead is everything that was, is or can be. God is “JHVH,” “The I Am.”

There is no way humans can understand God. In fact, God, as He creates, literally grows from within Himself. His potential is unlimited and eternal.

When you become a Son of God and think like God, you can then become true friends with the same mind and heart. God will consider what each Son has to say and suggest. Do you remember when Abraham, a friend of God questioned if there are only ten righteous, would He destroy Sodom? God agreed to the suggestion and said, “He would not.”

Moses, as a friend of God, also got God to change His mind when He wanted to destroy Israel. He heeded Moses' advice by considering what the heathens would say as to what kind of God would deliver His people and then have them killed.

God reconsidered, changed His mind and designed a whole new covenant, called *The Old Covenant*, which included blessings and curses. Now, Israel had to go into the wilderness and prove themselves worthy to enter The Promised Land of Abraham. No illegal immigrants were permitted.

Israel, under Joshua, took the land from Egypt and the new generation followed The Word of God.

A physical jubilee was to follow despite all possible human weakness. God tolerated their infidelity over and over again.

Finally, Israel did not want God to teach and rule them (Isaiah 1). Israel believed the gods of The Gentiles were much more prosperous. They disobeyed God and left Him to follow Baal.

The jubilee was lost until a more worthy nation come. So, God chose another method to make His Sons. He divorced Israel and sought new virgins to be His Brides. It would take time, but God is very patient and, according to prophecy, Christ would bring it to fulfillment (Matthew 21:43).

CHAPTER 10

THE MIND OF GOD

The Prophet Amos said, “*can two walk together, except they be agreed*” (Amos 3:3). You need to think like Christ and God, in order to be like them. At The Jubilee, all debt will be forgiven. Paradise will be a time for eternal joy and you will think like God. Even those in outer darkness will be able to grow to have The Mind of Christ.

CONSCIOUSNESS

“*What is man that you are mindful of him*” (Psalm 8:41). You were created a little lower than the angels, but you were crowned with His *glory* and *honor*. You began as animals in the flesh and will become Sons of God or His children. As humans, your bodies are just like tents – only “*a temporary dwelling place.*”

The spirit breathed into your minds gives you understanding and separates you from the rest of the animal kingdom. You have a conscience with a mind to wonder what this is all about.

You cannot understand why you were born or how you should behave, because you are like animals. The human journey was laid out for you to discover *good* and *evil*. What is the purpose, if any, of having “*The*

Spirit In Man.” This gift from God was to help you understand your role in life and to comprehend what the creation was all about.

Descartes, the philosopher, concluded, “*I think therefore I am.*” Your consciousness makes you what you are. “*The spirit*” is your very being and what “*life*” is.

You are naked and need an eternal body to be *perfect* and completely whole. Before you can become a spirit, you are in your mother’s womb as a fetus complete with functioning and awareness until your true birth at The Resurrection, “*O LORD our LORD, how excellent is your name in all the earth*” (Psalm 8:9). God, your Father, gave you the gift to be in His *image* with His mind.

Jesus was the firstborn and you will follow when God adopts you from your human family. Christ, at His birth, became a servant by choice, though He had the mind of God (Philippians 2:5, 7-8).

You, too, will have the same Mind of God and, when you repent (with your *free choice*), you will receive The Holy Spirit. The Holy Spirit leads you to the *truth* of God and you will live by every Word of God (Matthew 4:4). By remaining faithful, you have the hope of perfection to receive the very Body and Glory of God.

You will receive the body of God at your *spiritual* birth – The Resurrection. It is a gift from God. You will be, completely, clothed like God and be eternal. You will be in The Jubilee, praising God for His great love.

YOUR PERFECT BIRTH

“Before she travailed [no birthing labor], she brought forth [born], before her pain came [labor], she was delivered of a man child” (Isaiah 66:7). This announcement came from the temple of God regarding the birth of Christ (Isaiah 66:6).

The birth of your Savior is followed by a wonderful, glorious announcement, ***“Who has heard such a thing? Who has seen such things [plural]? Shall a nation be born at once? For as soon as Zion [Jerusalem] travailed [tribulation], she brought forth”*** (Isaiah 66:8).

This is a prophecy of the coming Millennium when Christ and *The Bride* invite the whole world to The Jubilee Wedding Feast. Israel will be restored to first place once again (after their forefathers lost that honor) (Isaiah 66:9-10).

This prophecy ends with the *promise* from God of *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth*. It follows after The Millennium, ***“For as the new heavens and the new earth, which I will make [future], shall remain before me, said the LORD, so shall your seed [Israel] and your name remain”*** (Isaiah 66:22). God already has before Him in heaven, *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth* to come down to earth, as Christ’s prayer foretells (Matthew 6:10).

Isaiah ends with The Millennium Period and everyone will come to worship in Jerusalem (Isaiah 66:23-24).

GOD'S WORK

God, The Creator works and Christ works, even on The Sabbath, as He said, in John 5:17. They are already in The *Rest* of His Father in heaven.

Your Messiah declared to His Disciples that when He is resurrected and enthroned next to God as Melchizedek, He would join His Father in building *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth* (John 14:1-3).

God makes a model of what He creates as He molds, like a potter. This pre-constructed model is a *spiritual* New Earth, “*Let not your heart [desire] be troubled [confused]: you believe in God, believe also in me. In my father’s house are many mansions [estates]: if it were not so, I would have told you, I go to prepare a place for you. And if I go and prepare a place for you, I will come again and receive you to myself; that where I am, there you may be also*” (John 14:1-3).

THE JUBILEE

The Seventh Trump is near (Revelation 10:7). “The Mystery of God” is to be fulfilled and made known as the angel told John (Revelation 10:11). “*The jubilee trumpet*” blows with great noise, praise and worship for your God. Your High Priest, Christ, and God have been creating *The New Heavens* and *The New Earth* for the last two-thousand years.

God announces their new creation, “*And I saw a new [latest] heaven and a new earth: for the first heaven*

and the first earth were passed away [Lake of Fire baptism]; *and there was no more sea* [baptism]. *And I John saw the holy city* [newly built], ***new Jerusalem***, *coming down from God out of heaven, prepared* [pre-made] *as a bride* [wife] ***adorned for her husband*** [Ezekiel 16]. *And I heard a great voice out of heaven saying, Behold, the tabernacle* [house] *of God is with men and He will dwell with them* [like the beginning] *and they shall be His people* [world] *and God himself shall be with them and be their God.* [Request the free book, *The End Is The Beginning*]. *And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things* [suffering] *are passed away. And He that sat upon the throne said, Behold, I make all things new. And He said to me, Write: for these words are true and faithful”* (Revelation 21:1-5).

The Jubilee begins. There will be no debts, slavery or pain. This is a continuation of what began in The Garden of Eden. The Promised Seed from Abraham has to restore what was lost (Genesis 3:15 and Matthew 18:11).

A new dimension begins and it will be a new, wonderful *spiritual* dimension. Truly, The Jubilee begins with The Kingdom of God, which will grow forever and ever. Hallelujah!